

# A SPANISH GRAMMAR,

FIRST COLLECTED AND  
PUBLISHED BY *RICHARD PERCIVALE*

*Gent.* Now augmented and increased, with the declining of all the Irregular and hard Verbs in that Tongue, with diuers other especiall Rules and necessary Notes for all such as shall be desirous to attaine the perfection of the  
SPANISH TONGVE.

Done by *John Minshew* Professor of Languages  
in *LONDON*.

HEREVNTO FOR THE YOVNG  
beginners learning and ease, are annexed Speeches,  
Phrases, and Prouerbs, expounded out of diuers Authors, setting  
downe the line and the lease where in the same bookes they shall finde  
them, whereby they may not only vnderstand them, but by  
them vnderstand others, and the rest as  
they shall meet with them.

*Virescit vulnere Virtus.*



Printed at *London* by *JOHN HAVILAND* for  
*George Latham*. 1623.

1841

1841

1841

1841

1841

1841

1841

1841

1841

1841

1841

1841

1841

1841

1841

1841





# TO THE RIGHT WORSHIPFULL GENTLEMEN

Students of GRAYES INNE, health and happinesse: and to the affected to Languages there, daily increase, with perfect accomplishment of the most commendable qualities.



*Diogenes a famous Roman meeting on a time with the Emperor Marcus, asked him whither he went: who answered, I am going to Sextus, vt discam quod nondum scio, that I may learne that which I doe not yet know. Diogenes the Philosopher went to Athens to Antisthenes to learne of him somewhat that hee was ignorant of; but Antisthenes not willing to impart at that time any of his doctrine, repulsed him: the other left not off his purpose, but more and more importuned him, in such sort, that Antisthenes taking up a staffe to drine him away, Diogenes stretched out his necke, willing him to strike on hardly, for he should not finde a staffe so hard, that could drine him from him so long as he might learne any matter by him worthie the hearing. I speake this Gentlemen, meaning none of you to be bound by their example, seeing one was an Emperor and might doe what he list, and the other a Cinick Philosopher that would doe that he ought: therefore if a man haue any learning or quality, let him bring it to you, and if it be tedious vnto you, or hinder your sport, rather than be troubled with him, hob him or flout and scoffe him away. Be not imitators of Demosthenes which spent more oile in the lampe in studying to enrich his minde, than wine to comfort his body; but rather waste your wine and spare your candles: neither be so foolish as Cleanthes the Philosopher, that drew water in the night that he might follow his studie in the day; rather take your ease in the night and your pleasure in the day, because Mutantur tempora & nos mutamur in illis. Ies Gentlemen, if you doe but set before your eyes these famous men, which haue bene and are of the house you now remaine in, (the names of some few I can now recite) as Sir Nicholas Bacon Lord Keeper, Lord Burleigh Lord Treasurer, Sir Walter Mildmay, and Sir Francis Wallingham, learned Fitzherbert Lord chiefe Iustice of the Common pleas, which abridged the Law, and Sir William Stanford, which wrote the pleas of the*

## To the Gentlemen students of

the crowne, Sergeant Yeluerston, Sergeant Daniel, Sergeant Spurling, Master Brograu, Master Stanhop, Master Helquit, Master Anthony and Master Francis Bacon, with diuers others, might well moue you to consider that Qui veult plus qu'un autre valoir, doit plus qu'un autre scauoir: He that will be esteemed aboue another man, must haue more knowledge then another man: And Meglio esser mendicante che ignorante, Better to be a beggar than barren of good letters. But these letters are painfully purchased, why Petit ardua virtus; Difficilis virtutis via; Difficilia quae pulchra: Therefore Pythagoras counselled his familiar friends that they should chuse out the best kinde of life, although the most difficult: and Salust saith, deckings pertaine to women, and trauels belong to men: and Seneca affirmeth, that base is that honour which is gotten with idlenesse, which the Roman policy when it flourished confirmed by an ancient law duly kept, that euery father that had children of the age of ten yeares should become surety for them, that they should not liue idle, or commit any excesse, which was so nearely looked vnto, that they publicly chastised Cato the Censor's sonne for a saucinesse committed, and banished a brother of good old Cato for liuing idlie among them. None durst presume to goe into the streets but hee carried some token in his hand what kinde of life or studie he followed, which if in these times it were in force, how many street walkers would retire themselves to some vertuous studies. But me thinke I heare some say, Ars longa & vita breuis, I answer them with the Thebane Philosopher, which in the 75. Olympiade, came to the solempne sports kept about the citie Olympia in honour of Iupiter, who had made all the apparell he ware with his owne hands: his shooes he had sowed, his shirt he had woven, being demanded where he had learned so many mens arts, answered, In the beginning there was but one art at all, and that the sloth of men had caused that one to be diuided into many, and how euery particular man with diligence and labour might obtaine to the knowledge of that that all men in generall had knowledge of. To this purpose Pythagoras said, He that knoweth not what he ought to know, is a brute beast among men: He that knoweth no more than he hath need of, is a man among brute beasts: He that knoweth all that may be knowne, is a God among men. So many examples present themselves, that rather time would faile than matter herein, and for that my case standeth now rather to demand remedie and not giue counsell, or to giue thanks for good turnes receiued, and not prescribe precepts, I thinke good briefly and plainly to shew vnto you how hauing found my selfe beholding to some of you whom I had read vnto in the tongues, I thought nothing could better agree with my profession as to shew my gratefull minde towards you, than by labouring for your ease, in these instructions of the Spanish tongue: which if they be thankfully receiued, I shall thinke my labour well imploied. Yet before I could make an end of this and the Dictionary, I did as Robertus Stephanus saith of himselfe in gathering together his Dictionaries called Thesaurus linguarum Graecae & Latinae; I haue made Thesaurum, that is, a Treasure for others, but thereby haue made my selfe a beggar, whereof some of the right vertuous and worthy gentlemen of that your house, (to whom I am most beholding, and therefore stand most in affection bound) vnderstanding, wished me to goe forward in so good a worke, and not to giue over for some wants: which then of themselves they supplied,

Pythagoras.



## Languages in Grayes Inne.

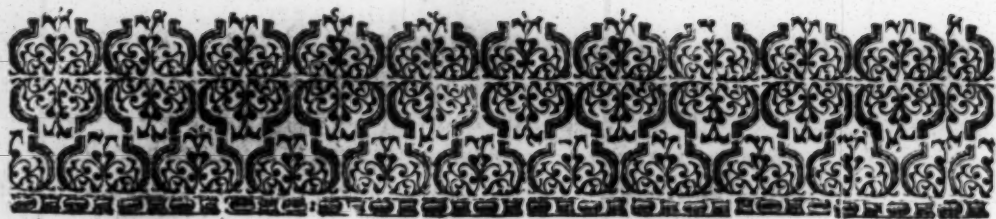
plied, whose good kindnesse if I forget, I wish the law of Draco, ( which was to punish with death, if there were any found so vnthankfull as not to requite a good turne, or at least to forbear to acknowledge his benefactors for the same ) might be inflicted on me : for there can be no greater iniurie offered to a free minde, than to be reputed ingratefull : although in these daies sonre as great evils lesse unpunished as those that are punished, Vntemperatenesse, Vnshamefastnesse, Vnfaithfulnesse, and Vnthankfulnesse. But to begin with my Benefactors in this worke in order as they began with me in Graies Inne, first Master William Willoughby, a Gentleman as vertuously minded and of as good cariage as the rest : next Master Henry Bing, whose excellent learning, placed together with such gentlemanlike conditions makes him beloued among the Elders, and honoured among the younger sort : after him Master Francis Barneham, and Master Iames Hewes, endued with exceeding good wits, and no lesse good natures : I may not forget the good worths of Master Robert Hill, and Master Cheeke, Gentlemen well studied in the most commendable kindes of learning : Master Dauison of excellent learning, wit and vertues : Master Helmes and Master Gill, both for their good parts better knowne than I can heere set downe : Master Thomas Mason, and Master Iohn Roberts, adorned with ornaments of languages, to their other learning and vertues : Master Archer as he is well read in language, so is he a good fauourer of learning. The rest of the well accomplished young Gentlemen whom I know not, I say of them as my minde is towards them best : Gentlemen, if for these praises you shall one play on another, I pray you cast all on me, for I protest none of them euer knew that I meant to write vnto them, much lesse put any of their names in print. Thus wishing to you as much as Cicero writing to his friend Atticus, would limit to be wished to his dearest friends, viz. To enioy health, to possesse honour, and neuer to suffer want, I rest

At your command

IOHN MINSHEU.

M m





## TO THE READER.



If it be vanity and vexation of minde, for a man to toile in this life to gather riches together, when he knowes not whether he be wise or foolish that shall enioy it : we may thinke the sweat of our spirits and the toile of our bodies, to be altogether vaine, which write or print, when we cannot tell whether they will proue sober or franticke, to whom we leaue the possession of our trauels. But the Spaniard saith, *Quien de mieldo se murió de cagaxónes le hizieron la sepultura*; and because as the Italian saying is, *A molti puzza l'ambro*, Amber is accountèd stinking by many : and *Dal asino non ne hai che calzi & petti* : I am resolued for this once to put on Merchants eares, to heare with patience euery mans speech and dispraisings of his wares, because *Quot homines tot sententia*, So many men, so many mindes. Therefore he that should leaue off any good worke for any mans ill speech, may well be likened to that poore silly fellow, which on a time went with one of his sonnes with his Assie before him to the wood, to fetch him a load thereof for his wife and children ; and meeting trauellers by the way, some misliking with him that he should goe on foot, and let his Assie goe leere ; others, that he road himselfe, and suffered his childe to goe a foot ; others, that hee loaded the poore Assie with two persons, being scarce able to carrie himselfe ; others, when he left his sonne alone riding, and himselfe goe on foot ; in such sort that the countrey fellow could not tell what to doe, seeing doe what he could, still he found reprehenders : whereupon he would goe no further forward, but returned sad home to his house without wood, where he remained for feare of fault-finders, till he and his household were neere starued with cold, till at last finding his owne simplicitie, he returned to the wood, and to as many as hee met by the way, he said, *He that passeth for other mens speeches and reproofes, endureth cold and a thousand griefes* ; and he that will throw a stone at euery dogge, shall haue a weary arme : but I hope, *Qui bien fera, bien aura* : And for all the dogs barking, the Moone will stand where it did. And I say to the malicious, *Mets ta main sovent en ton sein, & tu ne mesdirás de ton prochain*. And let them remember, that *Chi fa quello che non deve, gli auien quel che non crede* : According to a History I haue read of an Emperour, who had his brothers sonne for his cupbearer ; The Emperours Steward and vnclie, for enuie perswaded the cupbearer that his breath did stinke, and wished therefore to turne his face from the Emperour when he deliuered the cup till remedy were found : forthwith he told the Emperour, that his cupbearer had defamed him to all his Court,  
by

## TO THE READER.

by saying his breath did stinke; and to know it for a certaintie, he likewise told him how he should see the cup-bearer turne away his face from him when he came neere him; whereupon the Emperour conceiued such wrath against him, (as the saying is, The anger of a Prince the messenger of death) that hee sent expresse command to his burners of bricke, that they should burne that man that came vnto them first the next morrow; and likewise commanded his cup-bearer to be there so early that none might bee before him: on the morrow morning very early the cup-bearer going, and passing by a Church in the way, went in and fell into such a sound sleepe, that it was the afternoone before he could awake. The Steward in the meane time to see the euent of the Cup-bearer, went and was burned himselfe aliue. The cup-bearer at his returne signified to the Emperour what had hapned, and also was desirous to know of the Emperour why he should send him thither, &c. If neither Histories nor reason perswade them, they must needs be answered with silence, and so gentle Reader I rest silent from troubling thee or them herewith any longer, more grieued at my mishap and disabilirie, than wanting good will or liking to doe thee seruice. *Hac raptim. Vale.*

IOHN MINSHEU.

M m 2



In opus M. Minshewi edendum,

Iohannis Keperi generosi

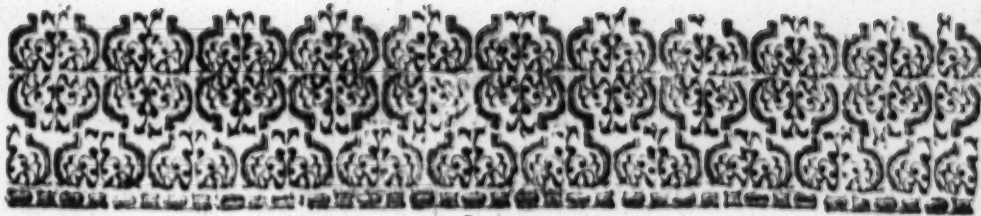
ἰῶανῆς κῆπερι

Qui cupis auriferi contingere flumen fberi  
Vocibus & veris noscere gentis opes,  
Vel mores, vel quas exercet Iberia merces,  
Hesperiam & totam noscere quisquis aues :  
Minshæum legito, lectum (mibi crede) probabis,  
Ingenium, genium, munera, verba, fidem :  
Qui totidem subiit noctesque diesque labores,  
Et flores veluti sedula carpsit apes ;  
Qui tibi, qui patriæ, sese sumptumque dicavit,  
Edidit, & tantæ sedulitatis opus,  
Aut lauda, aut saltem noli mordere, latrando  
Zoile, tabificus, ne videare, canis.

Soneto de un capitan Español  
del Autor.

De un diamantino muro circuydo  
Con puertas de métal ynpenetrable ;  
Y por guarda un dragón fiero espantable,  
Era el huérto de Atlánte defendido :  
Mas siendo del fuerte Ercules vençido,  
Fue abierta la puerta yncontrastable,  
Y las pomas de prégio ynestimable  
Gozáron luego quantos han querido,  
Vos *Minchen* soys el Ercules famoso,  
Que a pesar de la ynbidia ( dragon fiero )  
Abristes puerta al huerto ameno umbroso,  
De la yspanica lengua, que primero,  
Cerrada estubo alyngles curioso,  
Do gozara pomas de oro veradero.





## THE PROEME.



Spanish is a speech, whereof in times past (in Spaine) there hath beene foure kinds vsed: The first and ancientest is the Biskaine, which was the speech of the prouince of Biskay and Nauarre: it hath his originall from the Caldean tongue, as the learned in them both affirme, to whom it plainly appeareth that this is of greatest antiquitie.

The next is that which was spoken in the kingdome of Granado, and in part in the kingdomes of Andalusia, Valencia, and Aragon, and was the Arabique, whose originall is the Hebrew almost among them quite worne out, yet to this day they keepe the pronounciation of some of their letters still, as c, G, j, X, Z.

The third is the Catalan, which is a kinde of French, and had his beginning from the prouince of Gascoigne, from the ancient citie Limoges: they spake this in the kingdomes of Cataluna, Mallorca, Menorca, Iuica and Cerdena. This Catalan tongue was called Prouençal: and the Italians confesse that the Prouençals were the first inuentors of their rimes and verses, which are so much prized in Italie where Petrarque, Boccace, and Dante, giue some testimonie in retaining their words in many places.

The fourth is that which is now at this day commonly vsed and spoken thorow all Spaine, and is called Lenguá vulgar, the mother tongue, other wise Lenguá Castellana, or Española, the Castilian or Spanish tongue, principally vsed in Aragon, Andalusia, Núrca, Castilla, Nuéua, and Vexa, Leon: also in Portugall, although the Portugall tongue haue such difference in certaine words and pronounciations, that it may well be called a language by it selfe, euen as the English and Scottish, yet in truth, it is not so seuered, but that they sprang from one fountaine, and haue one descendance.

This Lengua vulgar, or Spanish tongue, draweth his originall from the Latine or Roman, and because the Roman conquerours were most politicks in providing for the continuance of their estates and language to their posteritie, by planting where they woon, Colonies and garrisons; as also not permitting any stranger to the priuiledge of their lawes or freedome of their townes, to buy, sell, or traffique, but in the Roman or Latine tongue, as in Spaine they haue done: Therefore the Spanish retaineth still to this day so much of the Latine tongue. And by reason of the Incurfion and ouerrunning of so many strange nations, as the Atricans inhabiting about Carthage, called Carthaginians, Gothes, Huns, and Vandals, which ceased not till they had ouerrunne the most part of Europe, yet so settled themselves in Andalusia in Spaine, that they called it by their owne name Vandaluxia or Vandalia of Vandalles, as also

Four sorts of Spanish.

1. Biskay tongue most ancient.

This tongue doth come from the Caldean.

2. Arabique tongue in old time vsed in

Granado, Andalusia, Valencia, and Aragon, and yet retaineth it in the

pronounciation of these letters, c, G, j, X, Z.

3. Catalan tongue or Prouençal, a kinde of French, had

originall from Gascoigne, and was vsed in Cataluna, Malor-

ca, Iuica, Cerdena.

4. The Spanish now vsed.

Difference betwene the Spanish and Portugall tongue.

A Colonie is a place inhabited,

whether people are sent to dwell: or people sent to

inhabite such place: or a cite, the people where

of once came from another

citie or countrey.

Why the Spanish keepeth so much of the Latine.

Andalusia, whereof first so named.

## The Proeme.

How the Moores  
first entred and  
conquered Spain.  
Chro of Spaine.

*Africans inhabiting Mauritania called Moores, whose first comming in, proceeded from the licentious lining and unbridled lust of Don Rodrigo then king, in dishonouring and deflowring a Ladie called Cava the daughter of Earle Iulian, one of his Nobles.*

*By meanes hereof, this language remaineth so altered and changed from his owne first propertie and nature, admitting words, accents, and pronunciations of other strange nations, as it is become a language of it selfe compounded of the Latine and a-boue named tongues: but yes so, that it hath much more of the Latine than of all the other, whereby it may be called the Latine tongue altered or corrupted.*

*For Spanisb words comming from the Latine, marke the table here following and their like.*

*Spanisb words drawne from the Moorish tongue begin much with Al, as Alcúza, a vessell for oyle: Alfidél, or Alfiler, a pin: Almúd, a measure, a pocke: Alguarismo, Arithmeticke: Almoháda, a pillow, &c. or in ç, as çaherir, to upbraid, çahórda, a hogstie: or sound on r, or x, Almaráxa, an ewer of glasse: Xabón, sape: Almoradúx, marjoram: Arredrár, to drine away: Arréide, foure pound weight, &c. also in z, as Zagál, a shepherd. And at this day the Moores in speaking Spanisb for júro a Dios, I sweare by God, they say jureux a Deux: for Hombre, they say Homber: for Vuestra mercéd, your worship or mastership, they say Voxár mérxe.*

Generall



3

# Generall Observations from the Latine for the framing of the SPANISH.

Substantives of the Latines in <i>as</i> , as	Charitas,	in Spanish, thus,	Caridad.
	Majestas,		Magestad.
	Crudehtas,		Crueldad.
	Civitas,		Ciudad.
	Fidelitas,		Fedelidad.
	Securitas,		Seguridad.
	Obscuritas,		Escuridad.
	Conformitas,		Conformidad.
	Calamitas,		Calamidad.
	Voluntas, &c.		Voluntad.

The most part of words in Latine beginning with <i>Pl</i> , changed in <i>Li</i> , as	Planus,	In Spanish,	Lléno.
	Planus,		Lláno.
	Pluvia,		Llúvia.
	Plaga,		Llaga.
	Plorare,		Llorar.

In like sort <i>F</i> . turned into <i>H</i> , as	Facere,	Spanish,	Hazér.
	Faba,		Háva.
	Fax,		Héz.
	Falco,		Halcón.
	Farina,		Harina.
	Fator,		Hedór.
	Formosus,		Hermóso.
	Ferrum,		Hiérro.
	Fervor,		Hervór.

The Latine ending in <i>io</i> , made Spanish by put- ting <i>n</i> to it, as	Educatio,	Spanish,	Educación.
	Religio,		Religión.
	Electio,		Elecion.

The Latine ending in <i>um</i> , by changing <i>um</i> into <i>o</i> , as	Ornamentum,	Spanish,	Ornáméto.
	Experimentum,		Experimentó.
	Exemplum,		Exémplo.

The Latine ending in <i>lis</i> , by taking away <i>is</i> , as	Materialis,	Spanish,	Material.
	Finalis,		Finál.
	Subtilis,		Suñl.
	Debilis, &c.		Débil.

The Latine ending in the Infinitive made in <i>e</i> , by taking away <i>e</i> by Apocope, as	Castigare,	Spanish,	Castigar.
	Amare,		Amar.
	Tenere,		Tenér.
	Perdere,		Perdér.
	Sentire,		Sentír.
	Salire,		Salír.



By adding to the end of a word by *Paragoge*, as  $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Apostema,} \\ \text{Appetere,} \\ \text{Anas,} \end{array} \right\} \text{Spanish,} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Apostemación.} \\ \text{Apetecer.} \\ \text{A'nade.} \end{array} \right.$

By adding to the middle of a word by *Epenthesis*, as  $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Certum,} \\ \text{Caelum,} \\ \text{Membrum,} \\ \text{Messis,} \end{array} \right\} \text{Spanish,} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Cierto.} \\ \text{Cielo.} \\ \text{Miembro.} \\ \text{Mieffe.} \end{array} \right.$

By adding to the beginning of a word by *Prothefis*, as  $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{Plumescere,} \\ \text{Capistrare,} \\ \text{Scala,} \\ \text{Scandalum,} \end{array} \right\} \text{Spanish,} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Emplumecér.} \\ \text{Encabistrár.} \\ \text{Escála.} \\ \text{Escándalo.} \end{array} \right.$

By changing a letter by *Metathesis*, in the middle of a word, of the second person plurall of the Imperative mood, as D and L changing places, as for Castigadle, they write Castigalde, for Dezidle, they say and write Dezilde.

The Spanish sheweth his originall from the Latins, although by corruption many words have changed letters, as in these following & their like, as

a	into	c	as	Lac, milke, Lèche. Casens, chése, Quéso.
b		u		Barba, a beard, Bárva. Bibo, I drinke, Bévo.
c		g		Amicus, a friēd, amigo. Acutus, sharp, agudo
e		i		Directus, directed, derigido. lectus, read, leydo
f		h		Ferrū, irō, hiérro. facer, to make or do, hazér
g		y		Regnum, a kingdome, Reyno.

I proceed no further herein, but leave every Latinist to consider of them as he shall meet with them by reading, whereby he shall manifestly perceive by the multitude of words in this tongue derived from the Latine, how easie it is for every meane scholler speedily to obtaine the knowledge of the same, and with these rules and precepts, which here I shall set downe, I doubt not but that every one (desirous thereof) may with facilitie and short time speake it and write it more than meanly: the which the better to performe, I take it the best order (according to the saying, *Qui bene dividit bene docet*, He that divideth the matter, he handleth well, teacheth well) to divide this present Grammar, into *Orthographie*, *Prosodie*, *Etymologie*, and *Syntaxis*, of which though I shall not deale with all of all that may be said, yet at least that shall be necessary to be said for the instruction of the learner in this tongue.

No difficultie  
in the Spanish  
tongue or other  
vulgar tongues  
comming from  
the Latine.

# OF ORTHOGRAPHIE

## Of Grammar and hir parts.

**G**rammar, is an art teaching the right rules of true speaking and writing, and it is derived from the Greeke word γραμμα, which is litera, as much as to say, *scientia literaria*, a knowledge of letters. Definition of Grammar.

### Division of Grammar.

Grammar, according to Quintilian, is twofold: Historical and Methodical.

Historical, gotten by imitation of Authors.

Methodical, is taught by precepts, which onely we here handle.

### Subdivision of Grammar.

Grammar Methodical is divided into foure parts, Orthography, Prosody, Etymology, and Syntaxis.

Orthography, conuersant in letters.

Prosody, in syllables.

Etymology, in words.

Syntaxis, in sentences.

Division of Grammar.

Orthographie, of the Greeke word ορθος right, γραφω writing.

Prosodia, of προς, i. ad, & οδω, Cantus, that is, Accentus.

Etymologia, of ετυμος, true, λεγω speech.

Syntaxis, of συν, i. con, & ταξις, ordinis, quasi, coordinatio.

Propertie of the foure parts of Grammar.

Orthographie is a right rule of true writing, as before of ορθος right, γραφω writing, whereby euery word is to be set downe with his true letters, as Cierro, certaine, not Sierto.

Definition of Orthographie.

Hereto belongeth Orthopœia, which is a right rule of true speaking, of ορθος right, πœia word, that in speaking men pronounce not moze grosse or smal, then the nature of language wil allow, or otherwise then the accustomed manner of pronunciation vsually permitted therein, as Vino, wine, not to pronounce it as Englishmen doe, Veino, but smaller as they pronounce the double ee, Veeno, Dios, God, not Deios, but Dhecos. But of this hereafter in the letters moze at large.

Definition of Orthopœia.

And because Orthographie (the former part of our Grammar) chiefly consisteth in the true writing of euery word with his right letters: It must of necessitie follow, that whosoever speaketh, or heareth a tongue spoken in his proper Idioma, and should write downe the same so spoken, that he knowe the power and propriety of each letter in that tongue (because of letters are framed syllables, and of syllables are made words, and of words the whole speech, and language) the which neglected, must needs bring a confusion to the learner, and little or no fruit to the Teachers labour. Therefore to our purpose.

The force of letters.

There are in the Spanish tongue 27. letters, whereof 24. are single, and thre double.

The single, A. b. c. d. e. f. g. h. i. j. k. l. m. n. o. p. q. r. s. t. v. x. y. z.

The double are these, ch. ll. ñ.

Letters.  
Double letters.

If any aske the question, why the Spanish, being descended from the Latine, hath in it moze letters then the Latine: I answer, that although it be now (for the most part of words therein) corrupt and broken Latine, yet it had at the first (as in the Poeme before going) his originall from the Caldean, Arabique, and Hebrew tongue, of which they reserve some letters.

Nota.

But now to our letters as they are in order in the Alphabet or crosse row, without beginning with the vowels, and then skipping from one consonant to another, distracting the memory of the young beginner in a tongue, which would much better retaine the precepts given thereon, so they might not be giuen to a new order of reckoning their letters, differing from that in their childhood they learned, and now can hardly be dyamne from.

\* f. g. j. x. z.

**A** is sounded plainly, with opening the mouth as in the Latine, French, and Italian, as in English, man, can: so in Spanish, Manáda, a floske, Ensaláda, a salade of herbs.

**B** as the Latine, and is called *littera labialis*, one of the labiall or lip letters, because it cannot be pronounced without toyning the lips together. It is pronounced as in English, baker, basket: so in Spanish, Bacia, a bowle, Bárro, clay, but in the midst of a word, except the word come of the Latine, the Spaniard vsually confoundeth it with V consonant, and soundeth



B and V conso-  
nant, written  
and pronounced  
one for another.

Nota.

B cast away.

soundeth as V consonant, as Trabájo, travell, they pronounce Travájo: Palábras, swordes, they sound Palábras: Cábra, a goat, Cávra: Labor, labour, Lavór: Albáda, a pack saddle, Alváda: Alabáda, a holbard, Alaváda: so oftentimes in the beginning of a word, as Bay-  
lir, to dance, Vaylir: Balsquina, a peticoat, a kirtle, Valquina: Bellóra, an acorne, Vellóra:  
Berméjo, red colour, Verméjo: Bexica, a bladder, Vexica. wherefore I advise the studious  
in the Spanish tongue, if he finde not a word in the Dictionary, in one of these letters, let  
him turne to the other: as if he find not Báyo, which is used in good Authoꝝ for Bay co-  
loured, or Bayard, let him looke Váyo, and there he shall find the same: If not Vanár, to  
bathe, looke Banár: If not Vóz, looke Bóz, a voice.

**B** In the middelt of a word going before another consonant, and making the pronunciation  
harder, is cut off in Spanish, as Subeil, they write, Suel, Absénte, Ausénte, Obscúro, Oseúro,  
or Escúro.

**C** This letter hath two manner of soundings according to the vowels that follow it. If a o  
or u follow it, he is sounded as k, as in Cára, a face, Cóco, weuell, Cuchára a spoon: so like-  
wise in the middle of a word, as Descánsó, rest, Escória, dross, Escudilla, a dish: but going be-  
fore e or i pronounce almost as the Italian c, as Prudénzia, Disfalcó, or their c before is o or io, as  
Prudentia, Iustificatióne, Cecina, powdered flesh, Ciruela, a plum.

**C** Before r, cut off, as Acto, an act: the Spaniard saith A'to: Pacto, a covenant, Páto.

c pronounced as  
the Italian c,  
g pronounced  
as English  
Ch.

Marked with a dash under it thus, ç, called ç Cerilla, or ç Cedilla, is proper to the Arabique  
tongue, from whence it was first taken: it is sounded by putting the tongue to the rankes of  
the teeth, as the French ç, Viença, or very neere: the Italian ç, as Diligença, Sciença. This ç  
must be so pronounced, whether it be at the beginning, end, or middle of a word, though  
a o or u follow: and is sounded as in English Ch, as çaraguélles, great garcoine or Spa-  
nish hose, çoçóbras, crosse blowes of fortune, çúfre, brimstone: pronounce Thsaraguélles,  
Thloçóbras, Thsútre, in like manner before e and i, as çenogiles, garters, çiento, a hun-  
dred: pronounce Thlenogiles, Thsiento.

D pronounced  
as Dh.

**D** Is pronounced in the beginning of a word, as in Latine, French, and Italian: as in En-  
glish, Dagger, Decoy: so in Spanish, Déga, a dagger, Dóze, a dosen: this word Dios is ex-  
cept from this rule, and is pronounced as these that follow, that is, if it come in the middelt  
or end of a word, you must pronounce him as d in Greeke, as dh in English, as Cádá, eue-  
ry, Cádha, fidelidád, fidelitie, fidehndbadh.

**E** Is as the Latine, and the Italian, and as in English, Bend, I end: so in Spanish, Bende-  
zir, to blesse, Bever, to drinke: and it must never be sounded so small as the English e, as fee,  
wee: nor so broad as the French doe their e feminine, as Femme, a woman, pronounced  
Famma, but betwixt both as first above.

**F** Is as the Latine and the Italian tongues, and inst as the English. The Spaniard wri-  
teth him when the Latines write Ph, as Philosophus, in Spanish Filósofo.

Ga.  
Go, Gu.  
Gua.

**G** Answerable to the Hebrew Gimel, & hath two manner of soundings according to the vowels  
which follow it, if a o or u immediatly follow, it is pronounced as in the Latine, Gabriel,  
Gorgias, Gubernator: Italian, Galante, Gatta, Gullare: French, Garçon, Gougmand: as in English,  
Gate, Gold, Gutier: so in Spanish, Gáfo, a lazar, a leper, Gófo, rude, Gula, gluttonie.  
But if after the u immediatly come a, as Guante, a glove, sound Gwante: Agua, water, Agwa:  
Mengua, want, Mengwa.

Gue, Gui, like  
Ghe, Ghi.

But if after u follow e or i, pronounce as the French Guerre, Guide: as in English Gueft, guide:  
so in Spanish Guerra, warre, Guía, a guide: sound Ghera, Ghia, except these words follo-  
wing, Guéro, adle, Aguéro, scolding, Garguéro, the throat, Sirguéro, a drawer or tower of a  
boat with a roape, Huguéro, a swordpile, Triguéro, a sparrow that lieth in the wheat, Ci-  
guéna, a stroke, Pediguéno, mantan, Halaguéno, flatterring, Signéna, a citie of Spaine, Ver-  
guénça, shame, Aguéro, a grandfather, Deguélo, a beheading, Reguédo, belking, Vnguéro,  
ointment: and words that come of the Infinitive mode in Guár, as Enxaguár, to water,  
Enxágue, Menguir, to want, Mengue.

Ge, Gi, as je;  
ji, which is as  
in English the,  
thi.

**G** Before e or i is sounded as the Latine Gero: Italian, Giove: French, Gisant: English, Gef-  
frey, Giles: or more like the Spanish, called j jota, or j consonant, which is pronounced as  
sh in English: so they say Gémir, to groane, pronouncing as it were written in English  
themir. Gingibre, ginger, thinshty.

G and j conso-  
nant written  
one for another.

For the Spaniard maketh no difference in speaking of this G before e and i, from the j conso-  
nant, and they write one for another, as Agéno, Lináje, Mensáje, Lisongéro, Magestád, or  
Ajéno, Lináje, Mensáje, Lisongéro, Magestád.

**G** Before n in the middle of a word lost, as Ignominia, Inominia, ignominie, Ignorancia, Inorán-  
cia, ignorance.

**H** This letter is neither vowel nor consonant, but a noise of aspiration, it is called in the  
Spanish as in the English Ache, which were more properly in my opinion to be called as  
some



## Of Orthographie in Letters.

some nations doe, Ha, because it doth so import in pronouncing as in English, Harnes, Harnes, Hate, Hang.

This H in the beginning of a word is pronounced in Spanish with more vehemencie and emphasis, and in the middle of a word weakely and faintly.

*H in beginning of a word.*

In the beginning he must be pronounced with more force, or else there would be no difference found in speaking these words, and their like, Háca, a nagge: Acá hither: as Ven acá, come hither, Hásta, untill, and Asta for a speare: Háya, a beech tree: A'ya, a nurse: Húso, a spindle: U'so, use.

In the middle of a word not so forcible, as Ahechár, pronounce as Aechár, Alholi, Aloli, a barne or garner.

*H in middle of a word.*

This H goeth before all the fine bowels, as Hazér, to make or doe: Hécho, made or done: Higa-do, the liner: Hollin, the foot of a chimney: Húso, a spindle. But it may not in true Spanish orthographie be written before a consonant, as Cristo, not Christo.

Besides it is lost after T, as Ortografia, not Orthografia, Teólogo, not Theólogo.

*H taken away.*

With P also it is lost, and the P turned into F, as Filósofo, not Philósofo, which they must observe that would write the Spanish tongue aright in all that are like these.

Where U followeth H, it is pronounced as W, Huérto, an orchard: Huétlo, a bone: pronounce Wuerto, Wuello: or as if G went before thus, Gwerto, Gwello, which I take to be more fit for the Englishmans pronunciation for these and the like words.

*Huc pronounced as Wuc.*

That word which beginneth with H, shall not have H in the middle, except C goe before it, as in Hécho, made, Hechuzár, to bewitch, and the like.

**I** There be three kinds of I in the Spanish, that is, small i, Greeke y, and j Jota, or consonant. These two i, y, with a verie small slender sound, as the French and Italians doe, which is as the double e in English, we, she, se, decree, so in Spanish, Tirano, a tyrant, Teerano: Vida, life, Veeda, & not as Englishmen pronounce Teyrano, veid, which all other nations mislike in hearing them speaking Latine, saying, Propino tibi, they pronounce Propeino tibi, which I would wish they would but marke, and take notice thereof: for the French, Italian, and Spaniard, doe learne and are taught by their Scholemasters to pronounce the Latine different from their owne tongue, otherwise one nation should not understand another speaking the Latine. But in this tongue as in the Italian and French, they must observe, except they will fall into the vice of *Iotacismus*, and be laughed at, and not be understood by strangers when they speake or reade.

*I three kinds.*

*A note for Englishmen.*

This small i is used in a word as a bowell by it selfe, as Linta, yucke, and in a diphthong, as Niéto, a nephew.

*Small i.*

Y is put in the beginning of a word before a bowell or consonant, as yo, ya, yr, and in the end as Daréys, Podéys.

*Y.*

J Jota or j consonant, which this tongue taketh of the Arabique, is pronounced as in French, *Jamais, Dejs, Jehan*, in English like th, as Jardin, a garden, shardin. Jarro, a pot, sharro, ójo, an eye, Oho, Hoja, a leafe, Hosha: Ovéja, a sheepe, Quéscha: Abeja, a bee, Avesha: In dewill and thereabout, they pronounce it not so much in the teeth, but more in the throat, as Cshardin, Csharro, Ozho, Hozha, Overza, Abezha.

*J pronounced like th.*

Some authoys in the Spanish write these words (yet ill) and the like, with H. Hierusalem, Hierónimo, which should be thus, Jerusalem, Ierónimo.

**K** The Spaniard neuer bleth this letter but when it is required of the Greeke and proper names then sounded as in the English, as Kalendas.

**L, M, N, O, P.** Are all pronounced as in the Latine, French, Italian, and last as in English: But P may not be doubled in Spanish, as Aprovar, to approve, Apetito, appetite, and not Approvár, Appetito. P before T in the middle of a word lost, as Captivo, pronounce Cautivo.

*P not doubled.*

*P cast away.*

Neither can L be doubled in Spanish when the word cometh of the Latine, and keepeth the Latine sound, as Ilústre, in Latine *Ilustris*: Silaba, in Latine *Syllabz*: Colégio, *Collegium*. So likewise of N, as Tiráno, not Tiránno, in Latine *Tyrannus*, but when these keepe not the sound of the Latine, looke hereafter in double L, n, and there you shall finde how they are pronounced.

*When L not doubled.*

*When N not doubled.*

*Nota.*

**O** hath two pronunciations, not of his owne nature, but by reason of a bowell following him.

If a follow, as in Latine and English, Quantitie, Quarter, so in Spanish Quíndo, When, Quartána, Quál.

But when ue or ui follow, it is to be pronounced as the Italian, *che, chi*, or the French *Que, Qui*, as English *Ke, Ki*, as *Questión, a Question or quarrell, Restion, Quícto, quiett, Rícto*, except when the word is Latine, as *Delinquente, Eloquente*.

*Que, Qui, pronounced as Ke, Ki.*

*R With*

**R** With the Greeks and Latines termed *Litera canina*, so the Spaniard calleth him *Letra per- rina*, the doggish letter, because dogs in grinning their teeth, when they would bite, sound this letter R. It is pronounced as the Latine, Italian, and French, but if it be in the beginning of a word it is sounded strongly, as the Spaniards doe sound. The Spaniard saith *Ráyo*, a sun beame, *Réy*, a king, or if it be doubled in the middle of a word, you cannot sound with too great vehemencie, as *Bárro*, Clay, *Cárro*, a Cart. But if it be in the middle of a word and single, with a gentle and milde pronunciation, as *ára*, an altar, *Móro*, a blacke *Moor*.

S made like a snake doubled with his head lifted up.

**S** With x, z, and c, are pronounced (although the one more plaine and sounding, and the rest lesse) by putting the tongue to the roofe of the mouth, and then hissing out the voyce with the lips open as a snake, and therefore the Greeks called this letter S by that hissing name, as also made it in fashion double as a snake, with his head lifted up, accordingly is it made in Latine, Italian, and Spanish. In Spanish these letters are called *Culebrinas*, which is snake, of *Culébra*, a snake, which beth hissing.

This S in the beginning of a word as in Latine, Italian, and French, and as in English *Sand*, *Seeth*, *Shin*, *Shod*, *Shudden*, so in Spanish *Sabér*, *Seuibrár*, *Sóbra*, *Sudór*.

But if S be single in the middle of a word betwene two vowels, then with a gentle sound almost like Z, as the French doe, adding thereby great grace to their tongue, as *Eglise* a Church, *Cause*, so in Spanish, *Causa*, *Rosa*, *úso*, *púlo*. But if it be doubled, then strongly, as in English *Crossed*, *colled*, so in Spanish *Fuéllemos*, *gruéllo*.

Note, S neuer in beginning of a word except a vowel follow.

In the end of a word as Z, as *Cárta*, *Lettera*, *Cámaras*, *Chambers*, or going to *Acle*. And note that this letter cannot be in the beginning of a word when a consonant next followeth. Therefore you must write *Espéro*, I hope, and not *Spéro*. *Escrivo*, I write, and not *Serivo*.

T neuer turned in C in Spanish, as in other tongues.

**T** Is pronounced as in the Latine, Italian, French and English, except it can neuer sound as, as the Latines, Italians, French and English doe when after i followeth: with a vowel, as in Latine *Prudentia*, Italian, *Amicitia*, French *Iustificacion*, English *Ambition*, in Spanish it must be written *Prudencia*, *Amicicia*, *Iustificación*, *Ambición*, otherwise the writing were false, and you should pronounce T as in *Tibi*.

Also if H follow T, as *Theólogo*, *Theopómpo*, write and pronounce *Teólogo*, *Teopómpo*.

U pronounced in end as ou.

**U** Being a vowel not to be pronounced with a small sound as English, *True*, *Bue*, *Crue*, *Issue*, but as the French doth in his diphthong *ou*, almost as the English *ou*, as *Tu*, *rou*, *Buche*, the maw, *Bouche*. But being a consonant is pronounced as in other languages in the beginning of a word, as *Váca*, a Cow, *Véna*, a Veine, *Víno*, wine, *Vóro*, a Vow, *Vúgo*, the common people, in the middle of a word as *Aváro*, *Gávía*, *úva*. Also when two u come together, and a vowel following, the second is a consonant, as *úvo*, *Túve*, except *Vuestro*.

X pronounced as sh. X and j written of an in Spanish one for another.

**X** Is one of the *Culebrinas* letras, the snake or hissing letters, as above said in the letter S, and is pronounced like j consonant, and the Spaniard often writeth one for another, as *Xarúe*, *Arrup*, *Jarúe*, and is pronounced as the French *ch*, as the English *sh*, as *Faxa*, a wasteband, *Bruxa*, a hag, *Floxo*, weak, *Faixa*, *Brutha*, *Flosho*.

**Y** Is about in I.

Ch as in English Ch.

L pronounced as Li.

n pronounced as ni.

**Z** Is called in Spanish *Zeta*, as the Hebrew *Zain*, from whence it is drawn, and from the Jewish tongue, and is pronounced as the English Z, as *Zingano*, a dzont, *Zelo*, zeale, *Zodiaco*, the Zodiacke, so likewise in the end of a word, as *Bóz*, a voice, *Crúz*, a Crosse.

**Ch** Before any of the five vowels to be pronounced as in English, *Chapman*, *Chiefly*, *Chicken*, *Chop*, *Chose*: so in Spanish, *Chameléce*, *Chamlet*: *Chiminea*, a Chimney: *Chorro*, a brooke: *Chufina*, a company of people of the common sort.

**L** Is gl in Italian, as *Cavagli*, *Moglie*, *Figli*, as double L in French, as *Fille*, *Copille*, as *Li* in English, as *Llano*, plaine: *Llano*, full: *Llover*, to raine: *Lluvia*, raine: pronounce *Llano*, *Llano*, *Llover*, *Lluvia*: so likewise in the middle of a word, as *Querrellóso*, *Kerreliso*, quarrelsome: in the end of a word neuer in Spanish written double, as *Mil*, a thousand, not *Mil*.

**n** Is the Italian and French gn, *Montagna*, *Campagna*, French *Campaign*, *Aliguan*, in English as ni: as *Montáño*, a mountain, *Montania*, *Campánia*, *Campania*, so *Dáño*, losse, *Danyo*, *Báño*, a bath, *Banyo*.



**A** Diphthong (according to the definition of Grammaticians) is a sounding together of two different vowels, as if they were but one only, as in English, Tide, Judito.

Definition of Diphthong.

In Spanish there are twelve sorts.

The first in ai, oi ay, as gaita, andáys, cantáis. But when two vowels come together and make more then one sound, they should be marked over head with two paches, to take away confusion, as Caida, pronounced Caída, and so the rest.

1. Ai, ay.

The second in ao, where a is more sounded then o, as Quartáo, a nag, Saráo, a hallo to dance in, Vilbáo, a proper name of a towne, are pronounced in the same sort, as Caro maule.

2. Ao.

The third in au, where a sounds more then u, as Causa, Autor, Caudillo: except Laúd, a lute, Ataúd, a tombe: La-úd, Ata-úd.

3. Au.

The fourth in ei and ey, where e is more sounded then i, as Réy, a king, Léy, a law: when they are severed, write them with two paches thus, Leítes, Reír.

4. Ei, ey.

The fifth in eu, where e is most perceived, as Féudo, Déudo, Réuma: being disjunct write thus: Reúntar, Reúngir.

5. Eu.

The sixt in ia, in which a is more heard sound then i, as Saia, Vaia, Malicia, Prefencia: except Mia, Dia, Porfia, Desfia.

6. Ia.

The seventh ie, ye, where e is most heard pronounced, as Viéto, Sciéto, Viéne, Bién, Quién, Quiera, Arriédo, Dispiéto, Apriéto, Pic, Piédra, Tierra, Ciélo, Infierno, Díez, Siéte, Miel, Hiel.

7. Ie, ye.

The eight in io, oi yo, where o is most sounded, as Yo, Dió, Vió: except Mio, Río, Frio, Tio.

8. Io, yo.

The ninth in iu, where i is more heard then the u, as Ciudad, a citie.

9. Iu.

The tenth in oi, oy, as Soy, Doy, Voy, Oygo: except Oy'do, Roy'do.

10. Oi, oy.

The eleventh in ue, where e is more sounded then u, as Fuéya, Muérte, Fuérte, Cuerno, Nuevo, Fuégo, Huélgo, Nuéz, Vihuela.

11. Ue.

The twelfth in ui, and uy, where u is more sounded then the i, as Muy, Fuy, Cuidado, Huyo.

12. Ui, uy.

Four Rules following shewing how euery vowell maketh a severall syllable by himsele, or is sounded in diphthong with another.

*The first Rule.*

If between two vowels come h, or a consonant, such vowels cannot toyne themselves together to make a syllable or diphthong, as Ahínco, Bolár, except Auré, Aurás, Aurá, Aurénos, Auréys, where u r and the vowel make a syllable, the like in Auria, Auríamos.

The first Rule.

*The second Rule.*

If two vowels coming together, neither of them being i nor u, make two syllables, as Neémas, Polléer, Roér, except these Hebrew words which end in two ee, as Ofcé, Bethlem, Bersabeé.

The second Rule.

*The third Rule.*

When the first person of a verbe both end in two vowels, and the first vowel being i, and the accent stand upon the same i, then that i maketh a syllable of it selfe without toyning it selfe with the vowel following, as Embío, Embías, Embía, Embíamos, Porfío, Porfías, Porfían, Espío, Espías, Espían, Confío, Confías, Confía.

The third Rule.

*The fourth Rule.*

But if the word both end in two vowels, and the first of them being i, and the accent not on the first, then they make both the vowels a diphthong into a syllable, as Grácia, Justicia, Daniél, Ezechiél, Gabríel, Senténcia, Vitória, and in like sort doe they when they haue the accent on the last of them, as Passión, Religión, Nación, Caución, Ración, because they come of words of the Latine that haue their accent in the Antepenultima, therefore must the Spanish haue it in the Ultima. Except these words in Spanish, Anciano, Diocesiáno, Diáblo.

The fourth Rule.

Of Triphthongs.

A Triphthong is a sounding of three vowels into one syllable with one breath together, and that after due sorts.

Definition of a Triphthong.

The first in iai, oy ay, as Vayáys, Espaciáys, where a is heard more then i.

1. iay, yay.

The second icy oy yey, where e is more sounded then i, as Enfuziéys.

2. icy, yey.

The third in iue oy yue, where e is heard more then u, as Hoyuéo, Arroyuéo.

3. iue, yue.

The fourth in uai oy uay, as Guáy.

4. uai, uay.

The fifth in uei oy uey, as Buéy, Buéyre.

5. uei, uey.

# Of Prosodia or Accents, the second part of this Grammar.



**A** Orthographie handleth letters, so Prosodie treateth of syllables, and the right sounding and pronouncing the same with their true accents, which is to make the syllable of word long or short, soft or sharpe, without the which the learner cannot tell how to read or pronounce the tongue, much lesse to be understood when he speaketh the same, whereby he shall be not onely disgraced, but be driven to bestow longer time, in forgetting that ill touch taken up, then he might be in going forward in learning due times so much. The which being carefully looked into at the first, cannot but much aduance the speaker, make himselfe understood, as also giue himselfe exceeding comfort

in going forward, when he knoweth he singeth true harmony, which cannot but delight those that will listen thereto.

Prosodia, is a rule or knowledge, shewing with what accent every syllable of a word is to be pronounced, as Cárcel, not Carcél, a prison.

Many haue affirmed the Spanish tongue to be subject to the Latine accents, saying it is for the most part deriued from the same, but common speech and vse shew the contrary in many words, as Latine *Genís*, in Spanish *Genesis*, *Sódoma*, in Spanish *Sodóma*, *Heléna*, so in Latine *amor*, in Spanish *amór*, *autór*, *Cérasus*, *Cerézo*. But yet note this, that words deriued of the Latine doe keepe the accent of the Latine, except some proper names of words ending in d, l, n, or r, as *Abstinéntia*, *Abstinéncia*, *Obediéntia*, *Obediéncia*, *Beneficio*, *Blánda*, *Cadúco*, *Ceremonía*, *Culpa*, *Digno*, *Dóte*, *Familia*, *Fecóndo*, *Furióso*, *Prémio*.

But if they end in d, l, n, or r, then they haue alwaies the accent in the last syllable, as *Amistád*, *Pestulenciál*, *Camelón*, *Passór*.

Except some few ending in l, n, and r, *ángel*, *ábil*, *apóstol*, *árbol*, *jóven*, *lór*, *ánfar*, *ámbar*, *acibar*, *ayuear*, *ayotar*, *alcázar*, *nácar*, *tíbar*, *cármén*, *cáncer*, *carácter*, *cárcel*, *Cristóval*, *cónsul*, *crimen*, *débil*, *débil*, *móvil*, *inmóvil*, *fócil*, *dócil*, *Estéril*, *estércol*, *Fácil*, *Dátil*, *Fragil*, *v'ul*, *inv'ul*, *fértil*, *inábil*, *mañal*, *márgen*, *mártir*, *mármol*, *Trébol*, *órden*, *origen*, *virgen*, *exámen*, *volúmen*, *imágen*, *betúmen*, *Esleuán*, and verie few as none besides these, for that in setting these downe I ran ouer (as neere as I could) euery word in the whole Dictionarie, whereby you may coniecture, what paines, trouble, and time, such booke of such method as this haue bestowed on them, before they can come forth to shew to the learner in a moment, that which the composer can hardly find out in a moneth: but if any other there be, I haue accented them in their places, as all the words generally in the whole Dictionarie whatsoever, to make the beginner, and also the well read to be perfect in the pronunciation, without which he shall be derided, as not understood when he readeth or speaketh.

All Nouns in ion, and in or, accent in the last syllable, as *Occasión*, *Predicadór*, so also in l, z, z, as *Alcaucí*, *Cortés*, *Pertináz*, *Cerviz*, except *Adiues*, a beast in Barbarie like a Foxe, which barketh and cryeth in the night as loud as a Foxe.

Although in the Latine there is in no word but one accent dominant, yet in the Spanish often are two found, as *Ciertamente*, *Fuertamente*, wherefore I will set downe the order of the Spanish accenting, first giuing example of those words which continually are accented, then of those which are sometimes, and sometimes not; last of all, those which haue two or three accents.

These words alwayes accented, as

Hé há  
y'd y'r  
aquí acá  
féd foy  
cál bóz  
grán ay  
Augustín acullá.

These words following sometime accented, sometime not, as

Al, If it be an article, it is not accented, as *Dezid al Señor ésto*, Tell your master this. But if it be not an article, it is then accented, as *Peñad en ál*, Think on some thing.

Aun, When que followeth it is not accented, as *Pédro aunque sepa morir no hará*, Peter although he knowe he should die, he would not doe it. But asking a question it is then accented, as *Aún duermes Pedro?* Doe you sleepe yet Peter?

Ante, Being a Preposition it is not accented, as *Ante Dios estámo*, We stand before God. But being an Aduerbe it is accented, as *Anté vino Pédro que Juan*, Peter came before John.

Ceréa,

Description of  
Prosodia.

Spanish not sub-  
ject to Latine  
accents.

Of the Latine,  
the Latine ac-  
cent.  
Words ending in  
D, L, N, or R,  
accented in the  
last syllable.  
Except these.  
Nota.  
Opus laboris.

3 Accents in  
one word.



## Of Profodia or Accents.

12

**Cerca**, a *Preposition*, not accented, as *Cerca todos dá el buen exemplo*, *Thou art all give good example*. But if it be a *Verbe*, *Aduerbe*, or *Proun*, or this particle *De* going before as following, then it is accented, as *El Rey cerca con su gente*, *que tiene cerca de si la ciudad y la rodéa*, *cerca toda*, y tiene la *cercas de piedad*, y de *cercas piedad* *hacen*. *The king both besetg his people, both he hath about him, the city, and compasseth it all about, hath him self, both hath his wall of stone, and more hand it compasseth strong.*

Nota.

**De**, *A Possessive* not accented, as *De mi padre heredé virtud*, *Of my father I inherited virtue*. But if it be not a *Possessive* it is accented, as *De mí habláis segun veo*, *You speak of me as I perceive.*

**Del**, *The article* not accented, as *Del virtuoso es la virtud amada*, *Virtue is beloved of the honest*. But if it be a *Pronoun* it is accented, as *Dios es bueno y del nos viene el bien*, *God is good, and from him cometh goodness.*

**Do**, *Spoken indefinitely* not accented, as *Do estuviere el bueno estaré yo*, *where the good man shall be, there will I be also*. But *spoken in asking a question* it is accented, as *Dó está Juan?* *where is John?*

**El**, *Being an Article* not accented, as *El bueno teme a Dios*, *The just feareth God*. If it be a *Pronoun* then accented, as *Cristo nos ama y él nos redimió*, *Christ loveth us, and he it is that hath redeemed us.*

**Entre**, *A Preposition* not accented, as *Entre los santos desseo estar*, *I desire to be among the goodly*. But *being a Verbe* it is accented, as *Entré Pedro y no Juan*, *Let Peter enter and not John.*

**Más**, *The Coniunction* not accented, as *No hagáis mal, mas haced bien*, *Do not evil but do good*. But *being an Aduerbe*, then it is, as *Más quiero vivir, &c. y es más querido*, *We flourish more at quiet, &c. and is better beloved.*

**Medio**, *In composition* not accented, as *Medio en burlas, medio en veras*, *half in jest, half in earnest*. If alone, then otherwise, as *Tened el medio en cosas*, *Keep a mean in matters.*

**Nos**, *Not accented*, as *Hálda nos Jesús*, *Christ loveth us*. But if it be a *nominative* cast to the *verbe*, then it is, as *Nos queremos*, *We will, &c.*

**Vn**, *Not accented*, as *Vn hombre, a man*. But if it be the *Coniunction* going before, then it is, as *Dile pan, y un real*, *I gave him bread and six pence.*

*These words following not accented, as*

*Alo, Alo, Aunque, Con, De, Dela, Delo, Delat, Delos, De mis, Desde, Desque, Don, Dosa, E, En, En mis, Enlo, Enlos, Enla, Enlas, Fray, Y, Lo, Le, Me, Micer, Mosen, as Micer sancho, y Mosen Pedro vienen, &c. after Sanchez and after Peter come. Ni, O, Pero, Pues, Por, Quan, Qual, San, Si, Su, So, Tan, Tal. Also all the Articles while they keep the nature of Articles, which are these,*

A, al, ala, alo, alas, alos,  
Del, dela, delo, delos, delas,  
El, la, las, Lo, los, le, les,

### Words of two Accents.

*Akramente, Hartobéda, Buénamente, Biénditamente, Clértaamente, Bionaventuradamente, Dié-ramamente, Grávenente, Grasióamente, Yguámente, Mátamente, Luéngamente, Magnificamente, Razónáblemente, Ráramente, Sábiamente.* Words of two Accents.

### Words of three Accents.

*Múymálamente, Múybuénamente*

Words of three Accents.

## Of Etymologie and the Nounce.

Definition of  
Etymologie.

**E**tymologie, is a Rule of shewing and searching out the Originall of words, with that pertaineth to them.

This searching out of originall and descent of words is considered in divers manners: but among the rest, for the beginners in any language whatsoever, this is so necessary, that without it, they could not understand or learne it: the which by the Latine Grammarians hath bene, and is called Declension and Coniugation (which is likewise a declination) but that the former is of the Nounes, and the other of the Verbes.

The Spanish hath eight parts of Speech, as the Latine.

{ Nounes, Pronounes, Verbes, Participle,	{ declined.	{ Aduerbe, Coniugation, Preposition, Interjection,	{ undeclined.
---	-------------	---	---------------

## Of the Nounce.

Primitive.  
Derivative.

Nounes be diuided into Substantiues and Adiectiues, which are likewise diuided into Primitive, Derivative.

The Primitive, which is not deriued of any other, but is *Primum*, of himself, as *Abéja*, a Bee.

The Derivative, is deriued from the Primitive, as *Abejonazo*, a great Bee.

And of like nature to these Primitive nounes, are these Interrogatiues, Relatiues, and Numerales following.

Interrogatiue.

To the Primitive, these following, and the like are subiect, as

The Interrogatiue, as *Quién?* who? *Qual?* what manner? *Quánto?* how much? *Quántos?* how many?

The Relatiue which answereth to the Interrogatiue, as *tal*, such a one, *Tantos*, so many.

Numeral.

The Numeral to which these kinds following doe belong, as

Cardinal.

Cardinal, from which as from a fountain the rest doe spring, these doe I wish the learner to haue by heart.

Cardinal  
Numerals.

1	vno	21	veinte uno	1500	mil y quinientos
2	dos	22	veynte dos, &c.	2000	dos mil
3	tres	30	treynta	3000	tres mil
4	quátro	40	quárenta	4000	quátro mil
5	cinco	50	cinquenta	5000	cinco mil
6	seys	60	sefenta	6000	seys mil
7	siete	70	setenta	7000	siete mil
8	ócho	80	ochenta	8000	ócho mil
9	nuéve	90	noventa	9000	nuéve mil
10	diéz	100	cién, or ciénte	10000	diéz mil
11	ónze	101	ciénte y vno	100000	cién mil
12	dóze	100	docientos y dozientos	1000000	millón
13	tréze	300	treisientos	2000000	dos millónes
14	catórze	400	quatrocientos	3000000	tres millones.
15	quinze	500	quinientos		
16	diés y seys	600	seyscientos		
17	diéz y siete	700	setecientos		
18	diéz y ócho	800	ochocientos		
19	diés y nuéve	900	nuéve cientos		
20	véynté	1000	mil		

Ordinal  
Numerals.

The ordinals, which declare the order of a place or time, as *Primero*, segundo, tercero, quarto, quinto, sexto, séptimo, or seteno, octávo, nóne, or noveno, décimo, or dezéna, onzéna, dozéna, trezéna, carorzéna, quinzéna, décimo sexto, décimo séptimo, décimo octávo, décimo nóno, veinténo, veinténo uno, veinténo dos, &c. Treinténo, quarenténo, cinquenténo, sefenténo, setenténo, ochenténo, noventéno, centésimo, or cienténo, doscienténos, trezenténos, quatrocienténos, quinienténos, seyscienténos, setecienténos, ochocienténos, nuevecienténos, millésimo.

partitiues



## Of Etymologie and a Noun.

13

**Partatives** which signifie many severally, as *Cádo vno*, every one, *Entrámbos*, both of them, *ni vno, ni otro*, neither of them, or one among many, as *ótro*, another, *algúno* some body.

**Universals**, as *tódos*, all: *ningúno*, no body.

**Particulars**, as *Algúno*, some body.

**Adverbials**, turning the Cardinal Numerals with the *Adverbe vez*, as *vna vez*, once: *dos vézes*, twice: *tres vézes*, thrise: *diez vézes*, ten times: *cien vézes*, a hundred times: *mil vézes*, a thousand times.

Partative num-  
merals.  
Universall num-  
merals.  
Particular num-  
merals.  
Adverbial num-  
merals.

## Derivatives.

**Derivatives**, which have contained under them these following, viz.

**Of countries or townes**, as *Aragónés*, a man of Aragon: *Andalúz*, a man of Andalusia: *Granadino*, a man of the citie or country of Granada: *Gadirano*, a man of Cadix or Caliz.

**Of the nation**, as *Dalmácios*, people of Dalmatia: *Ingléses*, Englishmen, or people of England: *Escotéses*, Scottishmen: *Francéses*, Frenchmen: *Móros*, blacke Moors: *Túrcos*, Turkes.

**Words in óso** are derivatives of their **Diminutives**, as *Mentiróso*, lying, of *Mentira*, a lie: *Clamoróso*, clamorous, of *Clamor*, clamor, *glorioso*, &c.

**Of signifying excess** in *udo*, and *azo*, as *Baruúdo* having a great long beard, of *Barba*, jarrázo, a great blow with a cup, of *jarro* a cup: *Papúdo*, having a great wide throat, of *Papo* a throat: *Rodillázo*, a great blow with the knee, of *Rodilla* a knee.

**Diminutives** in *ito*, *ito*, *éta*, *uella*, *illa*, *illo*, as *Bonico*, Bonito, pretty, good: *vaqueta*, *vaquilla*, a little cow or heifer, of *Vaca* a cow: *Ropilla* a little gowne or callosie, of *Ropa*: *Calderuella*, a little kettle, of *Calderón* a kettle: *Cardenillo*, somewhat black and blew, of *Cardeno* blacke and blew.

Derivatives.  
Of countries or  
townes.  
Of the nation.  
Derivatives  
from Primitives.  
Excessives in  
udo, and azo.  
Diminutives.

## Of Numbers.

**Of Nounes as well Substantives as Adjectives**, there are these affections following belonging, **Number**, **Case**, **Gender**.

The **Number** sheweth the quantity, the **Case** the quality, and the **Gender** the sex.

There are two **Numbers**, The **Singular** and the **Plurall**.

The **Singular** speaking of one, as *Libro*, a booke.

The **Plurall** of moe, as *Libros*, booke.

This is a generall Rule, if the singular number doe end in a vowel, the plurall number is made by putting to, as *Palabra*, *palabras*, *Cuerpo*, *cuerpos*, *Mudite*, *mudites*, *Javalí*, *javalis*.

Except some few, which must have *es* added to them, as *Rey*, *reyes*, *Ley*, *leyes*, *Fe*, *fees*, *Indy*, *indies*, so in this manner all nounes ending in consonants must have *es* added to them, as *Mercéd*, *mercedes*, *Ciudad*, *ciudades*, *Mortal*, *mortales*, *Pastor*, *pastores*, &c.

Numbers.

Nota.

## Of Cases.

The Spanish hath Cases as the Latine, but all in one ending or termination, and are declined with an article, as the Nominative with *el* la, the Genitive with the Preposition *De*, as the Italian and French, the Dative *Para*, the Accusative *a*, the Ablative as the Genitive, *de*.

## Of Genders.

The **Masculine**, as *El Padre*, the father.

The **Feminine**, as *La Madre*, the mother.

There are thye. The **Gender**, which is of small use with the Spaniards, as *Lo sincero*, *Lo malo*, for they speak by the Substantive, as *La Sinceridad*, *El mal*.

To know the Genders, observe well these Rules following.

All nounes ending in *o*, or *r*, are commonly of the Masculine gender, as *Cardinal*, a Cardinal, *Cárdo*, a Chiefe, *Pastor*, a Shepherd. Except *la Carcel*, a prison, *la Piél*, the skin, *la Ca- pilla*, a gutter, *la Equinocial*, the Equinoctiall, *la Nauál*, a barrell at sea, *la Hiel*, gall, *la Sal*, Salt, *la Máno*, a hand.

All Nounes for the most part in *a*, *d*, or *ion*, are of the Feminine gender, as *Manteca*, Butter, *Magestád*, Majesty, *Deliberación*, Deliberation.

¶ n 3

Names

Genders.  
Rules to know  
the gender of  
most part of  
Nounes.

Nota.  
Nounes in *o*,  
r, Masculine.  
Exception.

Nounes in *a*, *d*,  
ion, feminine.

## Of Etymologie and a Noun.

Names of  
trees com-  
monly the  
Masculine  
gender, and  
the fruits the  
feminine, as

El Perál, a Pear tree.  
El Ciruelo, a Plum tree.  
El Naranjo, an Orange tree.  
El Cidro, the Citron tree.  
El Manzano, the Apple tree.  
El Camueso, the Hippen tree.  
El Cerézo, the Cherry tree.  
El Alméndro, the Almond tree.  
El Avellano, the Hazell nut tree.  
El Castaño, the Chestnut tree.  
El Nogal, the Walnut tree.  
El Azeytuno, the Olive tree.  
El Olivo, idem.  
El Morál, the Mulberry tree.  
El Granádo, the Pomegranat tree.

La Péra, the Pear.  
La Ciruela, the Plum.  
La Naranja, the Orange.  
La Cidra, the Citron fruit.  
La Manzana, the Apple.  
La Camuesa, the Hippen.  
La Ceréza, the Cherry.  
La Almendra, the Almond.  
La Avellana, the Hazell nut.  
La Castaña, the Chestnut.  
La Nuez, the Wall nut.  
La Azeytina, the Olive.  
La Oliva, idem.  
La Móra, the Mulberry fruit.  
La Granáda, the Pomegranate.

Exception.

Except these whose tree  
and fruit are both  
Masculine, as

El Menbrillo, the Quince tree and Quince fruit.  
El Limon, the Lemon tree and fruit.  
El Alvérchigo, the Spice tree and fruit.  
El Averóque, idem.  
El Péro, the tree and fruit of a kinde of Apple, very raw and cold  
by nature, good to rost, red on one side.

Another excep-  
tion.

Except these also whose  
fruit is the Masculine  
& tree the Feminine, as

El Higo, the Fig. La Higuera, the Fig tree. (tree.  
El Dátil, the Date. La Palma, the Date tree or Palme  
El Razimo, the bunch of grapes. La Parra, the Vine, or La vid.

Verbals in or  
make themselves  
feminine by put-  
ting to a.

Verbals in or are of the masculine gender, and make themselves feminine, by putting to a,  
as Habladór, a speaker, Habladóra, a she speaker.

Likewise Nounes in o, make their feminine, by changing o into a, as Honrado, honoured,  
Honrada: Suegro, a father in law, Suegra, a mother in law.

## Of Declensions and of the Article.

Declension of  
the Article.

The Spanish (as likewise the Italian and French) have but one manner of Declension  
or declining, that is with the Article, which in Spanish is thus declined :

Article mascu- line Sing.	Art. el	Art. los.
	Gen. del, de lo.	
	Dat. Para el, Para lo.	
	Acc. a el, al, alo.	
	Ab. del, delo.	

## The Feminine Article thus.

Article femi- nine Sing.	Art. la.	Art. las.
	Gen. de la.	
	Dat. para la.	
	Acc. a la, ala.	
	Ab. de la.	

In the Spanish (as Italian and French) the Article Masculine is put sometimes to  
stead of the Feminine, when the word beginning with a vowel, as el agua, the water, el alma,  
the soule : to make the pronunciation more sweet *Aspernia gratia*, and it may also be put la agua, la  
alma.

Also in the Spanish (as Italian and French) the Article is never separated from Nounes  
Appellatives, neither in Singular nor Plural number : as Spanish, el libro, los libros, la cá-  
mara, a chamber, las cámaras. But in Nounes proper it is not used so : for it were absurd to  
say, el Francisco, la luana : neither is it used with this word Dios, except there be joined with it  
some Epithet, as el Dios todo poderoso, God almighty.

Nota.

Declining



## Declining of a Nounne.

All Nounnes are thus de- clined, Sing.	{	Son. el maestro.	{	Son. los maestros.
		Gen. del maestro.		Gen. de los maestros.
		Det. para el maestro.		Det. para los maestros.
		Acc. a el, o al maestro.		Acc. a los maestros.
		Abi. del maestro.		Abi. de los maestros.
The feminine gender thus, Sing.	{	Son. la doctrina.	{	Son. las doctrinas.
		Gen. de la doctrina.		Gen. de las doctrinas.
		Det. para la doctrina.		Det. para las doctrinas.
		Acc. a la doctrina.		Acc. a las doctrinas.
		Abi. de la doctrina.		Abi. de las doctrinas. *

Adjectives are declined like the Substantives both singular and plural number.

## Comparatives and Superlatives.

The Spanish to make comparison, in the comparative degree useth this participle Mas, as Mas diligente, more diligent, Mas vil, more vile: and to diminish, they use Menos, as Menos diligente, lesse diligent, Menos vil, lesse vile. Comparatives.

## The Superlative.

The Superlative is made of this participle Muy, as Muy iusto, very iust: sometime with ex- Superlatives.  
aggravating and magnifying a matter, they forme their Superlatives from nouns, as Illustrissimo, Humanissimo, Hermosissimo, most excellent, most humane, most beautifull.

These following thus compared:

Buëno, mejor, or mas buëno.  
Malo, peor, muy malo.  
Grande, mayor, muy grande, or Grandissimo.  
Chico, menor, or mas chico, muy chico.  
Mucho, mas, muy mucho, or muchissimo.  
Poco, menos, muy poco.

There be also Verbs of qualitie which are used with Comparative and Superlatives, as nouns wherof they come, as Muy mas elegantemente, much more eloquently, Muy mas discretamente, much more discretely. In like manner, Dispositions, as Detrás, behind, mas Detrás, more behind, muy Detrás, much behind: Debaxo, beneath or under, mas Debaxo, more below or under, muy Debaxo, much under or beneath.

## A Pronounne.

The Spanish Pronounne is as the Latine, like a Nounne, and is used in rehearsing, of a proper name, of Pro and Nomen, i. for the name, and in speech is used therfore.

Pronounnes are divided into { Primitives and Derivatives.

The Primitives are these, yo, tu, si, este, aque, se, el, esse, aquel, el qual, que, quien, mismo, to Primitives.  
which Mismo all before going may be coupled, as yo mismo, I my selfe: tu mismo, thou thy selfe, si mismo, himselfe: el mismo, he himselfe, and so may you say yo misma, tu misma, &c. they are called Primitives because they are Primi, first, and not derived of others,

Primitives divided into { Demonstratives. Relatives.

They are called Demonstratives because they shew a thing not spoken of before, as yo, tu, Demonstratives.  
si, aquel, esse, el.

Relatives as repeating or having relation to some thing spoken before, as el, esse, que, Relatives.  
quien, el qual.

Derivatives or Possessives, because they be derived of the Primitives and signifie possession, as belonging to some thing, as mio, or mi: tuyo, or tu: suyo, or su, nuestro, v. éstro. Derivatives.

In Pronounnes are chiefly to be noted, the persons, because all Nounnes and Participles

pleas be of the third Person, but Pronounes of all three Persons, as yo and his Plurall nos, be of the first Person, Tu and his Plurall vos, of the second: and all the rest whatsoever of the third Person, according to this rule. All Pronounes, Pronounes and Participles, be of the third Person, except yo and tu.

*The first person Yo, thus declined.*

Yo declined.

Mascul.		Fem.	
Pron. yo.		Pron. nos, nosotros.	
Gen. de mi.		Gen. de nos, de nosotros.	
Dat. Para mi.		Dat. Para nos, para nosotros.	
Acc. a mi, a me.		Accus. a nos, a nosotros.	
Ab. de mi.		Ab. de nos, de nosotros.	

Nota.

This Pronoun in the singular number serveth as well for the Masculine as Feminine gender, so in the Plurall both Nos. But Nosotros only to the Masculine, and Nosotras to the Feminine.

The Spaniard in speech and writing useth this Pronoun Nos with the first person Plurall of the Imperative mood, by taking away s, from the Verbe, as Vámonos, for Ván.os Nos, let us goe: Dexámonos, for Dexám.os Nos, let us leave.

From this Pronoun Primitive are two other derived, one from the singular number, as Mio from yo, another from the Plurall number, as Nuestro from Nosotros.

Mi and Mio.

Mio, Mia, in Latine *Mens, mea, meum*, in Italian *Mio, mia*, in French *Mon, ma*.

*Example.*

Mascul.		Fem.	
Pron. Mi, mio.		Pron. Mis, mios.	
Gen. de mi, de mio.		Gen. de mis, de mios.	
Dat. Para mi, para mio,		Dat. para mis, para mios.	
Acc. a mi, a mio.		Accus. a mis, a mios.	
Ab. de mi, de mio.		Ab. de mis, de mios.	

The learner in the Spanish must note, the manner how the Spaniard useth these Possessives, Mi, mio, Tu, tuyo, Su, suyo: and when he ought to use them in speech or writing, otherwise straight he will bewray himselfe in using improperly the tongue.

A rule when  
Mi, tu, su, and  
Mio, tuyo,  
suyo, are to be  
used.  
Nota.

Mi, tu, su, are still used, joined with another word, as Mi cavallo, my horse, not Mio cavallo: Tu pienfamento, thy thought, not Tuyo pienfamento: Su provecho, his profit, not Suyo Provecho.

But when a question is asked, and Mio, Tuyo, Suyo, put absolutely and not joined, as Cuya es esta espada? whose rapier is this? Answer: Mi, tuya, suya, mine, thine, his: and not Mi, tu, su: De quien es este cuchillo? whose knife is this? Answer, Mio, tuyo, suyo: and not, Mi, tu, su. In like sort when they make a relation of a thing spoken of before, and are placed at the end of a sentence, clause or period, as Este cavallo no es mio, mas de aquel que a mi lo dexó, para que yo fuesse a vna casa tuya: this horse is not mine but his that left it me, that I should ride to one of thy houses, and you cannot say, este cavallo es mi, que yo fuesse a vna casa tu.

These and many such like I wish the learner in the Spanish to marke diligently in authors as he reads.

S. added maketh  
Plurall number.

To make the Plurall number of Mi, Tu, Su, adde to s, as Mis, Tus, Sus, and so of other words whatsoever, as before of numbers in the Poeme.

This other derived from the Plurall Nosotros is thus declined.

Mascul.		Fem.	
Pron. Nuestro, Nuestra.		Pron. Nuestros, Nuestras.	
Gen. de Nuestro, de Nuestra.		Gen. de Nuestros, de Nuestras.	
Dat. para Nuestro, para Nuestra.		Dat. para Nuestros, para Nuestras.	
Accus. a Nuestro, a Nuestra.		Accus. a Nuestros, a Nuestras.	
Ablat. de Nuestro, de Nuestra.		Ablat. de Nuestros, de Nuestras.	

*The second person Tu, thus declined.*

Second person  
Tu.

Mascul.		Fem.	
Pron. Tu.		Pron. Vos, Vosotras.	
Gen. de Ti.		Gen. de Vos de Vosotras, de Vosotras.	
Dat. para Ti.		Dat. para Vos para Vosotras, para Vosotras.	
Acc. a Ti a Te.		Accus. a Vos a Vosotras, a Vosotras.	
Abi. de Te.		Abiat. de Vos de Vosotras, de Vosotras.	

Nota.

Note that the Spaniard most ordinarily joyneth to the Infinitive mood of any verbe, this particle os, which is as much as vos, as Hablaos, to speake unto you, Véros, to see you, De-ziros, to tell you.



# Of Etymologie, and a Pronounce.

17

Of this Primitive likewise come two Derivatives, the one of the Singular number, as of Tu comes Túyo, in Latine *Tuus, tuum*, Italian, *Tuo, Tua*, French *Ton, Ta*. The other of the Plurall, Vos, or Vosótro, comes Vuéstro.

## Example.

	Mascul.	Fem.		Mascul.	Fem.
Sing.	Rom. Tu, Túyo, Túya.		Plu.	Rom. Tus, Túyoa, Túyas.	
	Gen. de Tu, de Túyo, Túya.			Gen. de Tus, de Túyoa, Túyas.	
	Dat. para Tu, para Túyo, Túya.			Dat. para Tus, para Túyoa, Túyas.	
	Recus. a Tu, a Túyo, Túya.			Recus. a Tus, a Túyoa, Túyas.	
	Abi. de Tu, de Túyo, de Túya.			Abi. de Tus, de Túyoa, de Túyas.	

But note how the Spaniard and Italian account it a disgrace to speake to any man in the second person singular either in the Nominative Tu, or in other cases I, or Te, except it be to his Neagge, his slave, his lackie, boy, chamber, or to some of base & vile account. To their servants of the better reckoning, and to artificers and such like persons they speake in the second person plural, as Tráed aquí, bring hither, &c. Yréys a mi capicéro, you shal goe to my Accomaker, Dizeys que me haga unos borzeguis, and you shal tell him that he make me a paire of buskins.

Nota, how the Spaniard & Italian account it a disgrace to speake to any man in the second person singular either in the Nominative Tu, or in other cases I, or Te, except it be to his Neagge, his slave, his lackie, boy, chamber, or to some of base & vile account. To their servants of the better reckoning, and to artificers and such like persons they speake in the second person plural, as Tráed aquí, bring hither, &c. Yréys a mi capicéro, you shal goe to my Accomaker, Dizeys que me haga unos borzeguis, and you shal tell him that he make me a paire of buskins.

To all others they vse the third person, as Quiere V.M. andar, Will your Mastership goe Ruéga a V.M. que me haga essa merced, &c. I intreat your Mastership that you doe me this courtesie, &c.

Nota.

And whereas Englishmen say, You, the French *Vous*, the Spaniard and the Italian speake in the third person singular, as V.M.V.S. your Mastership or worship.

Nota.

The other Derivative of the plural number is this, Vuéstro, of Vos or Vosótro, in Latine *Vester, Vestri, Vestrum*, in Italian *Vostro, Vostre*, French *Votre*, in English *yours*.

Nota.

## Example.

	Mascul.	Fem.		Mascul.	Fem.
Sing.	Rom. Vuéstro, Vuéstra.		Plurall.	Rom. Vuéstros, Vuéstras.	
	Gen. de Vuéstro, Vuéstra.			Gen. de Vuéstros, Vuéstras.	
	Dat. para Vuéstro, Vuéstra.			Dat. para Vuéstros, Vuéstras.	
	Recus. a Vuéstro, Vuéstra.			Recus. a Vuéstros, Vuéstras.	
	Abi. de Vuéstro, Vuéstra.			Abi. de Vuéstros, Vuéstras.	

Vuéstro.

## The third person Si, thus declined.

Si.

	Mascul.	Fem.		Mascul.	Fem.
Sing. and Plurall.	Rom. carer		Plu.	Rom. carer	
	Gen. de si.			Gen. de si.	
	Dat. para si.			Dat. para si.	
	Recus. a si.			Recus. a si.	
	Abi. de si.			Abi. de si.	

Of this Primitive one Derivative, which signifieth in Latine *Suum, Sua, Suum*; Italian, *Suo, Sua*, French, *Sien, siene*; English, *His, as*.

## Example.

	Mascul.	Fem.		Mascul.	Fem.
Sing.	Rom. su, Súyo, Súya.		Plu.	Rom. sus, Súyos, Súyas.	
	Gen. de su, Súyo, Súya.			Gen. de sus, Súyos, Súyas.	
	Dat. para su, Súyo, Súya.			Dat. para sus, Súyos, Súyas.	
	Recus. a su, Súyo, Súya.			Recus. a sus, Súyos, Súyas.	
	Abi. de su, Súyo, Súya.			Abi. de sus, Súyos, Súyas.	

Su, Súyo.

I proceed with the examples of all the Pronounes following by declining them, because as I before said, it is one of the difficult things in the tongue to have the true vse of them, and whereby a stranger or the unlearned in his speech or writing, shall sooner discover himselfe to the naturall or learned in the tongue. Therefore let not onely the young learner, but also the well grounded, and those that are able to discourse and write the tongue well, observe how and when these Pronounes following (so little differing the one from the other) are to be used in their due time and place as followeth:

Nota the difference of these Pronounes following.

These two, *Este* and *Aquélle*, doe signifie unto us any thing that is nere vs, in that signification as the Latine *Hic, hoc*; in Italian, *Costa, Coste, Costui, Costei*; in French, *Celui, celle, Cuy, Cuyelle*; in English, *That* or *That man*, &c. They doe differ thus,

*Este* and *Aquélle*, in Latine *Hic, hoc*; in Italian, *Costa, Coste*; in French, *Celui, celle*; in English, *That* or *That man*, &c. They doe differ thus,

*Este* and *Aquélle*, in Latine *Hic, hoc*; in Italian, *Costa, Coste*; in French, *Celui, celle*; in English, *That* or *That man*, &c. They doe differ thus, *Aquélle* and *El* in Latine *Ille, illud*; in Italian, *Quello, quella*; in French, *Celui, celle*; in English, *That* or *That man*, &c. They doe differ thus, but a part from

Nota. *Este, Aquélle, Este, Aquélle, Este, Aquélle*.

## Example.

E'ne.

	Mascul.	Fem.	Neut.		Mascul.	Fem.
	Pron. éste,	ésta,	ésto.		Pron. éstos,	éstas.
	Gen. deste,	desta	desto.		Gen. destes,	destas.
Sing.	Dat. para éste,	para ésta,	para ésto.	Plu.	Dat. para éstos,	para éstas,
	Accus. a éste,	a ésta,	a ésto.		Accus. a éstos,	a éstas,
	Abbl. deste,	desta,	desto.		Abbl. destes,	destas.

In the singular number of this Pronoun, the first words in e, as éste, deste, para éste, &c. are of the Masculine gender: the second, ésta, desta, para ésta, &c. of the Feminine: the third, as ésto, desto, &c. of the Neuter: but in the Plural, the first is the Masculine and the other the Feminine gender.

Nota.

In the Genitive case, we say deste, and destes, taking away the first e, *Euphonia gratia*, that it might sound the smoother, yet one may also say, de éste, de éstos.

Aqueste.

E'ne.

Aqueste, Aquesta, Aquello, declined as in the examples next above, and so is E'nte, E'ña, E'ño: in Latin, *iste, ista, istud*: the Italian and French have no proper words to express it, but must be circumlocution: in English, he or that, more or next to that.

Mismo.

Mismo, Misma, Mismo, declined after the same:

Aquél, El.

Aquél, and El: in Latin, *ille, illa, illud*: Italian, *Quello, colui, quella, Coiui*: French, *Celui, celui, celle, celle*, he or that which in neither more nor less, declined both alike.

Nota.

Note that this El a Pronoun, and El the Article do differ in declining, specially in the plural number. This making Ellos, and that Los, as by comparing the one with the other, the Reader may see. Look the declining of the Article El, before in the Plour.

	Mascul.	Fem.	Neut.		Mascul.	Fem.
	Pron. el,	ella,	ello.		Pron. ellos,	ellas.
	Gen. del,	d'ella,	d'ello.		Gen. d'ellos,	d'ellas.
Sing.	Dat. para el,	para ella,	para ello.	Plu.	Dat. Para ellos,	para ellas.
	Acc. a el,	a ella,	a ello.		Accus. a ellos,	a ellas.
	Abbl. d'el,	d'ella,	d'ello.		Abbl. d'ellos,	d'ellas.

Nota.

Note that the Spaniard commonly bleth this Pronoun Le before a Verbe thus, *Le vi-no a la memoria*, it came to his memory: *Le dixo*, he told him: *Que del alma le salia*, which came from his soule: *Dar le lo*, to give him that: *Le respondió*, he answered him.

Nota.

Also the Spaniard bleth this Pronoun Le to the Infinitive mode of a Verbe, by changing r of the Infinitive into l, *Euphonia gratia*, as *Hablá-le*, to speake unto him, *Hablá-le*: *Oy-le*, to heare him, *Oy-le*: *Vé-le*, to see him, *Vé-le*.

Now followeth Que, Quien, El Qual, in Latin *Qui, Qui, Quis, Quis*, in Italian, *chi, che, il Quale, La Quale*, in French, *Qui, Lequel, Laquelle*, in English, *Who, which, thus*.

Que, Quien.

	Pron.	Que.
	Gen. de Que.	
Sing. and Plural.	Dat. para Que.	
	Accus. a Que.	
	Abbl. de Que.	

In this same manner is Quien declined.

El qual.

	Mascul.	Fem.	Neut.		Mascul.	Fem.
	Pron. el qual,	la qual,	lo qual,		Pron. los quales,	las quales.
	Gen. del qual,	de la qual,	de lo qual,		Gen. de los quales,	de las quales.
Sing.	Dat. para qual,	para la qual,	para lo qual,	Plu.	Dat. para los quales,	para las quales.
	Accus. a qual,	a la qual,	a lo qual,		Accus. a los quales,	a las quales.
	Abbl. del qual,	de la qual,	de lo qual,		Abbl. de los quales,	de las quales.

Verbes.

## Of Verbes.

Verbe passif.

Gerunds.

The Spaniard tongue hath the same kind of Verbes, as Latin, French, Italian, and Portu-gal, and a participle, as *Amando, Leyendo, Pidiendo*, as *Amado, Leydo, Pido*, I am loving, read, parted, or with this Accusative case as *Amado, Leydo, Pido*, I am loved, read, parted, as *Se dice*, it is said, *Se dicen*, they are said, as hereafter in their place more at large shall be declared.

And they have the Gerund in Do in the same manner as the Latines, as *Amando, Leyendo, Oyendo*,



Oyendo, in Louing, Reading, Hearing. But for the Gerund in Di and Dum of the Latine, they expresse after another manner. For Gerund in Di the Spaniard vseth the Infinitive mode and the preposition De, as De amár, of Louing, De leer, of Reading. For the Gerund in Dum, the Infinitive mode and the Preposition A, as the Infinitive mode of Soy with a Participle, as A amár, or Ser amado, to be Loued, A oyr or Ser oydo, to be heard.

And in like manner their Dupines, *Amatum*, they *A amár*.

Whereas the Latines say, *Amatu*, I say, *De ser amado*.

*Supines.*

And for Participles of the Active voice, *Amans*, El que áma.

For Participle of the Passive voice, *Amatus*, Lo que es amado.

*Participles.*

For Participle of the Future in *Rus*, *Amaturus*, El que ha o espéra de amár.

For Participle of the Future in *Dus*, *Amandus*, Lo que ha de ser amado.

All which by particular examples following shall plainly to the Reader appere.

## Of Coniugations.

The Spanish hath three coniugations onely both of Verbes Regular, and Irregular,

- 1 The first endeth in ar, as Mirár, to behold: Hablar, to speake.
- 2 The second in er, as Perder, to lose: Caér, to fall.
- 3 The third in yr or ir, as oyr, to heare: Cumplir, to accomplish.

## Tenses.

The first Person singular of the Indicative mode Present tense of all Verbes Regular, of what Coniugation soeuer, alwaies endeth in o, Miro, I behold, Hablo, I speake, Pierdo, I lose: Oyo, I heare.

## Indicative Mood.

**Imperfect of the Indicative, of Verbes Regular, of the second and third Coniugation in ia, or ya, as Perdia, I did lose: Cayá, I did fall, &c. Oya, I did heare. Compia, I did accomplish, &c. And of the first coniugation all in áva, as Miráva, I did behold: Habláva, I did speake.**  
**First Imperfect in y, or i, as oy, perdí, I haue heard, I haue lost: but of the first Coniugation all in é, as Miré, I haue beholden: Hablé, I haue spoken.**  
**Second Imperfect of all the three Coniugations of all Verbes with this Verbe Hé, and the Participle, as Hé mirado, I haue beholden: Hé leydo, I haue read: Hé oydo, I haue heard.**  
**Pluperfect thus, avia mirado, leydo, oydo, I had beholden, read, heard.**  
**Future of the Indicative of all Verbes Regular, and Irregular in ré, as Hablaré, I will speake: Leyré, oyré, haré, podré, sabré, Daré.**

The Terminations of Verbs thus varied as followeth.

Cuerie	Imperfect of the Indicative of the second and third Coniugation thus varied;	ia, ias, ia, iamos, iades, ían,	oy	ya, yas, ya, yamos, yades, yán,	as	Perdia, Perdias, Perdia, Perdiamos, Perdiades, Perdían.	as	oya, oyas, oya, oyamos, oyades, oyan,
Cuerie	Imperfect of the Indicative of the first Coniugation, in áva, ávas, áva: ávamos, ávades, ávan, as Habláva, hablávas, habláva, hablávamos, hablávades, hablávan.							
Cuerie	Future of the Indicative of all Verbes of all Coniugations.	ré rás, ra, remos reys, rán,	of first, second, and third, Coniugation in	ár, ér, ír,	hablaré, perderé, oyré,	by adding é long or accent to the Infinitive mode.		

The

## The Terminations of the Oprative and Subiunctive.

Cuerie	Present Tense of the Optative and Subiunctive of Verbes of the first Coniugation thus, by changing o, of the Indicative Present tense into e, thus,	{ e, es, e, emos, eys, en,	{ as as as amos, eys, en,	} as	{ háble, hábles, háble, hablémos. habléys, háblen.
Cuerie	Present of the Optative and Subiunctive of the second and third Coniugation, by changing o, of the Present of the Indicative into a,	{ a, as, a, amos, ays, án.	{ perda, perdas, perda, perdámos, perdáys, pérdan.		
Cuerie	Præterimperfect of the Optative & Subiunctive of Verbes of the first Coniugation thus,	{ ára, ria, álle, áras, rias, álles, ára, ria, álle, áramos, riamos, állemos, árades, riades, álledes, áran, rian, állen,	{ hablara, hablaria, hablásse, habláras, hablarías, hablásse, hablara, hablaria, hablásse, habláramos, hablaríamos, hablássemos, hablárades, hablaríades, hablásledes, habláran, hablarían, habláslen.		
Cuerie	Præterimperfect of the Optative & Subiunctive of the second & third Coniugation thus,	{ éra, ria, élle, éras, rias, élles, éra, ria, élle, éramos, riamos, éllemos, érades, riades, élledes, éran, rian, éllen,	{ perdiéra, perdería, perdiésse, perdiéras, perderías, perdiésse, perdiéra, perdería, perdiésse, perdiéramos, perderíamos, perdiéssemos, perdiérades, perderíades, perdiésledes, perdiéran, perderían, perdiéslen.		

And these Præterimperfect Tenses as all other of what Coniugation soever, of Verbes Regular, and Irregular, forme two voyces of themselves of the second person singular of the first Præterite Tense of the Indicative mode, by taking away *Se*, and by making it in the first Coniugation, *ára*, and *álle*, as of this second person of the Præterimperfect of the Indicative singular, *Revelásse*, cometh the Præterimperfect of the Optative, and Subiunctive *Revelára*, *Revelásse*, and of the second and third Coniugation of all Verbes Regular and Irregular, by changing that *se*, into *éra* and *élle*, as of this Indicative mood *entendiste*, cometh the Præterimperfect of the Optative and Subiunctive, *entendiéra*, *entendiésse*, of *oyste*, cometh *oyéra*, *oyésse*: of *diste*, *diéra*, *diésse*: of *estuviste*, *estuviéra*, *estuviésse*: of *anduviste*, *anduviéra*, *anduviésse*: of *pudiste*, *pudiéra*, *pudiésse*. And they forme the third voyce of this Præterimperfect by putting to *ia*, to the Infinitive mood, as of the Infinitive *revelar*, cometh this Præterimperfect *revelaría*, of the Infinitive *entender*, *entendería*, of *oyr*, *oyría*, of *dár*, *daría*: of *estár*, *estaría*, and *andar*, *andaría*.

Cuerie	Future of the Optative and Subiunctive of verbes of the first coniugation, thus,	{ áre, áres, áre, áremos, áredes, áren.	{ as as as amos, aredes, aren.	} as	{ Habláre. Habláres. Habláre. Habláremos. Habláredes. Habláren.
Cuerie	Future of the second & third Coniugation of the Opt. and Subiunctive, thus,	{ ére, éres, ére, éremos, éredes, éren.	{ Perdiére, Perdiéres, Perdiére, Perdiéremos, Perdiéredes, Perdiéren.	{ as as as amos, eredes, eren.	{ Oyére. Oyéres. Oyére. Oyéremos. Oyéredes. Oyéren.

Now it remaineth to give a Paradigma or example of every Coniugation of their Voyces, Tenses, Numbers and Persons, that the Student in the tongue may forme the rest by, which is the chiefest point of this our Grammar, and without the which the learner shall never be able to write or speak but by aune and rote, and so be discouraged from so laudable a purpose.

And



And for the better delight of the Reader, and for the affinitie of these two tongues, as for the pleasure and profit he may reape hereby, I haue here in the Examples following, set downe the Italian, that the vnderstander of both tongues may with one labour (and yet at his ease) see the difference the one from the other, and be hereby able in vnderstanding, writing and speaking, to practise either of them, without vsing the one for the other, or mixing them (a thing often due to the Spaniards nature, as all know who haue travelled in Spaine.) For euen as two things very like one to the other, if you see them at diuers times, and in diuers places, may easily make one miscarrie his memorie, and mistake the one for the other, when you see either of them againe by it selfe: so if you see them both at one time, and in one place together, and take good heed of them by comparing them, no doubt by one marke or other, you shall euer after be able to discern, know and call them: Euen so these two languages (sometime altogether so like) being thus laid together, will cause the Reader easily to discern and remember them.

why the Italian  
added to the  
verbes follow-  
ing.

## Aver and Sér.

And because this Verbe Aver, in Latine *Habere*, in Italian *Hauere*, in French *Avoir*, in English to haue, and Sér, in Latine *Esse*, Italian *Essere*, French *Etre*, English to Be, doe serue to the coniugating or declining of all other Verbes: They are best in my opinion first to be declined, especially this Verbe Aver, which may fitly be called *Verbum auxilium*, a helpfull Verbe, because he doth not only helpe to decline himselfe in his owne p[re]terperfect and p[re]terpluperfect, but both serue to decline all other Verbes whatsoever in the same senses, as by the Examples following you may see. And this Verbe Sér, as before, serueth, as in the Italian and French to decline all Verbes Passiues, for without it neither the Spanish, Italian, or French, can forme or decline their Passiues, as following you may perceiue.

Aver and Sér.

AVÉR  
declined.

*The declining of the first Auxiliar verbe Avér, in Italian  
Havere, in Latine Habere, in English to Have.*

**Indicative mode.**

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
	<b>Yo HE,</b> Tu ás, Aque á o3 há.	<b>Io Ho</b> & Haggio, Poeticall, <b>tu Hai,</b> colui ha, & háne; Poeticall.	<b>Ego HABEO,</b> <b>tu Habes,</b> ille Habet,	<b>I Have,</b> thou Hast. he Hath.
<b>Pres.</b>	<b>Plural.</b> nosótro3 Avémos o3 Hémos, volótro3 Avéys, aquéllos án o3 hán.	<b>Plural.</b> Noi habbiámo & hanémo, voi Hanéte, colóro Hánno.	<b>Plural.</b> Nos Habemus. vos Habetis. illi Habent.	<b>Plural.</b> we Have. ye Have. they Have.
	<b>Avia,</b> Avías, Avia.	<b>Havéna &amp; Havéa,</b> <b>Havéni,</b> <b>Havéna &amp; Havéa.</b>	<b>Habebam,</b> <b>habebas,</b> <b>habebat, &amp;c.</b>	<b>I Had,</b> thou Hadst, ec.
<b>Imper- fect.</b>	<b>Plur.</b> Aviamos, Aviades, Avian.	<b>Plur.</b> Havénamo & hanéamo, Havénate, Hanénamo & hanéano.		
	áve, uviste, úvo o3 húvo o3 óvo,	<b>Hébbi,</b> <b>havésti,</b> <b>bébbe.</b>	<b>Habui,</b> <b>Habuiſti, &amp;c.</b>	<b>I have had,</b> ec.
<b>First preter- perfect.</b>	Uvimos, uvistes, (éron. uvieron o3 huvieron o3 ovi-	<b>Havémmo,</b> <b>havéſte,</b> <b>bébbéro.</b>		
	<b>yo He,</b> tu ás, aquél á o3 ha.	<b>Io Ho,</b> <b>tu hai,</b> colui ha,	<b>Habui,</b> <b>habuiſti,</b> ec.	<b>I have Had,</b> ec.
<b>Secónd perfect.</b>	nosótro3 hémos o3 avémos, volótro3 aveýs, aquéllos án o3 hán.	<b>Avido</b> noi habbiámo, voi havéte, colóro hanno.	<b>havéto</b>	
	<b>Avia,</b> avías, avia.	<b>Havéna,</b> <b>havéni,</b> <b>havéna.</b>	<b>Habuerá,</b> ec.	<b>I had had,</b> ec.
<b>Imper- fect téſe</b>	Aviamos, aviades, avian.	<b>Avido</b> havénamo, havénate, hanénamo.	<b>havéto</b>	
	<b>Avré,</b> Avrás, Avrá.	<b>Haveró, hauró &amp; haró,</b> <b>haverái, haurái &amp; harái,</b> <b>haverá, haurá &amp; hará.</b>	<b>Habebo,</b> ec.	<b>I ſhal o3 will have, &amp;c.</b>
<b>Futur.</b>	Avrémos, Avrey's, Avrán.	<b>Haverémo, haurémo &amp; harémo,</b> <b>haveréte, hauréte &amp; haréte,</b> <b>haveránno, hauránno &amp; haránno.</b>		

**Imperative mode.**

<b>áyas tu,</b> <b>áya aquel,</b>	<b>Habbi tu,</b> <b>habbia colui,</b>	<b>Habe, ha- beto, &amp;c.</b>	<b>Have thou,</b> ec.
<b>ayámos noſótro3,</b> <b>ayáys volótro3,</b> <b>áyan aquéllos.</b>	<b>habbiámo noi,</b> <b>habbiáte voi,</b> <b>habbiámo colóro.</b>		

The Spaniards ſe in ſtead of this Imperative mood, this Word Ten of Tengo,  
I hold : which Tengo is often uſed of them for this verbe He.

This



# Declining of Verbes.

23

This Imperative mode, Ten of Tingo, so commonly used for *ayas, áya*, is thus declined: **AVER**

declined.

The Imperative of Tener, ordinarily used for the Imperat. of AVER, to have.	Tén tu,	Hold thou.
	Tenga aquel,	let him hold.
	Tengámos nosótro,	Hold we, or let us hold.
	Tened vosotros,	Hold ye.
	Tengan aquéllos,	Hold they, or let them hold.

The Optative mode is used with these signs, *Oxalá*, or else *Ofi*, or *Pluguéssela a Dios*: in Latine, *Vinam*: In Italian, *O Dio voglia*, *O che*, *Dio volesse che*, *O Dio che*: French, *Dieu vueille*, *Pluist a Dieu*: English, *would to God*, *I pray God*, *God grant*. The Potentiall like the Latine, with these signs, *May*, *Can*, *Might*, *Would*, *Should*, or *ought*: both declined like the Subiunctives following: but that the Optative and Potentiall alwayes make their future tense and Present tense all alike, as *Oxalá yo áya*, *I pray God I have*: so in the future, *Oxalá yo áya*, *I pray God I have hereafter*: *Oxalá yo Revéle*, *God grant I reveale*: future tense also, *Oxalá yo Revéle*, *God grant I reveale hereafter*: and so of the rest.

And because the Optative and Potentiall have their future tenses all one with their Present: and the Subiunctive hath two futures, and both differing from the Present, I hold it needfull to decline the Subiunctive, by whom the other two are framed.

## Subiunctive mode.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
<b>Pres.</b> Como <i>áya,</i> <i>áyas,</i> <i>áya.</i>	<i>Habbia,</i> <i>Habbi,</i> <i>Habbia.</i>	<i>Habeam,</i> <i>Habeas, &amp;c.</i>	When I had, when thou hadst, &c.
<i>ayámos,</i> <i>ayáys.</i> <i>áyan.</i>	<i>Quando</i> <i>Habbiamo,</i> <i>Habbiate,</i> <i>Habbiamo.</i>	<i>Cum</i>	

<b>Imperf.</b> Como <i>auria, uviéra, uviéssela,</i> <i>aurias, uviéras, uviésses,</i> <i>auria, uviéra, uviéssela.</i>	<i>Quando</i> <i>auriamos, uviéramos, uviéssemos,</i> <i>auriades, uviérades, uviéssedes,</i> <i>aurian, uviéran, uviéssén.</i>	<i>haueréi, haueria, haueréssela,</i> <i>haueréssis, haueréssis, haueréssis,</i> <i>hauerébbe, hauería, haueréssela.</i>	<i>Cum</i> <i>haueréssimo, haueréssimo,</i> <i>hauerésses, hauerésses,</i> <i>haueréssimo, haueréssimo, hauerésses.</i>	<i>Chaberéi,</i> <i>&amp;c.</i>	When I had, or did have, &c.
---	--	--	--	------------------------------------	---------------------------------------

Or decline with H. *Huviéra, Huviéssela, or Oviéra, Oviéssela.*

<b>Perf.</b> Como <i>áya,</i> <i>áyes,</i> <i>áya,</i>	<i>avido. Quando</i> <i>habbia,</i> <i>habbi,</i> <i>habbia.</i>	<i>Habuiro. Cum</i>	<i>habuerim,</i> <i>&amp;c.</i>	When I have had, &c.
<i>ayámos,</i> <i>ayáys,</i> <i>áyan,</i>	<i>habbiamo,</i> <i>habbiate,</i> <i>habbiamo,</i>			

<b>Pluper.</b> Como <i>uviéra, or uviéssela,</i> <i>uviéras, or uviésses,</i> <i>uviéra, or uviéssela.</i>	<i>avido. Quando</i> <i>uviéramos, or uviéssemos,</i> <i>uviérades, or uviéssedes,</i> <i>uviéran, or uviéssén.</i>	<i>haueíssi,</i> <i>haueíssi,</i> <i>haueíssi.</i>	<i>habuissén,</i> <i>&amp;c.</i>	When I had had, &c.
<i>uviéramos, or uviéssemos,</i> <i>uviérades, or uviéssedes,</i> <i>uviéran, or uviéssén.</i>		<i>haueíssimo,</i> <i>haueísses,</i> <i>haueísses.</i>	<i>habuissén.</i> <i>Cum</i>	

<b>First future.</b> Como <i>uviere,</i> <i>uviéres,</i> <i>uviere.</i>	<i>Quando</i> <i>haueré,</i> <i>hauerá,</i> <i>hauerá.</i>	<i>habuero. Cum</i>	<i>habuero,</i> <i>&amp;c.</i>	When I shall have hereafter, &c.
<i>uviéremos,</i> <i>uviéredes,</i> <i>uviéren.</i>	<i>hauerémo,</i> <i>haueréte,</i> <i>haueranno.</i>			

# Declining of Verbes.

Second Future Como	auré, aurás, aurá, aurémos, auréys, aurán.	avido. Quando	baucro, baucrái, baucrá. baucrémo, baucréte, baucránno.	baucro, baucrái, baucrá. baucrémo, baucréte, baucránno.	baucro, baucrái, baucrá. baucrémo, baucréte, baucránno.	when I shall have hereafter, &c.

## Infinitive mood Present tense

AVE'R, ]	Hauere, ]	Habere, ]	to Have.
Avér avido, ]	Hauer bauúto, ]	Habuisse, ]	to Have had.
Espero dé avér,	{ Douer hauere, Esse per hauer,	Habiturum esse, ]	to Have hereafter.
Aviendo, ]	Hauendo, ]	Habendo, ]	in Having.
Avido, ]	Hauito, ]	Habitus, ]	I Had.
		Participle of the Future tense.	

El que espéra de avér, ] *Esse per hauer,* ] *Habiturus,* ] to Have hereafter.

The other verbum *Auxiliarium* Sér, with which all Passives are declined :  
it is in Latine *Sum, es, fuit* : in Italian *Essere*, to Bée.

SER

## Infinitive mood

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Present.	Yo SOY, tu eres, aquél es.	Io SONO, tu sei, colui è.	Sum, es, est.	I Am, thou Art, he Is, &c.
	Plu. nosotros SÓmos, vosotros soís, aquéllos són.	Plu. Noi siamo, voi siete, coloro són.	Plu. Sumus, estis, sunt.	
Imperf.	éramos, érades, éran.	éramo, et erámo, eráde, eráno.	eram, eratis, erant.	I was, &c.
	éramos, érades, éran.	éramo, et erámo, eráde, eráno.	eram, eratis, erant.	
First Preter- perfect.	Fuí, fuiste, fue.	Fui, fosti, fuit.	Fui, &c.	I have been, &c.
	Fuímos, fuístes, fueron.	Fuimus, fuistis, fuerunt, fueron, et fuero.	Fuimus, &c.	
Second Preter- perfect.	He, o, úve, ás, o, uviste, á, o, úvo.	Sé, sei, e.	Sé, &c.	I have been, &c.
	Avémos, o, uvimos, aucys, o, uvistes, án, o, uvieron,	Sido. Siémo, siete, són.	Sido, &c.	
Pluperf.	Avía, auías, avía.	Avía, avías, avía.	Aviam, &c.	I had been, &c.
	Avíamos, aviades, avian,	Avíamos, aviades, avian.	Aviamus, &c.	

Future



# Declining of Verbes.

25

Future	Seré, serás, será.	Saré, & fia, sarai, sará & fia.	Ero, &c.	I shall or will be.
	Serémos, seréys, serán.	Sarémo, saréte, saránno.		

## Imperative mode.

Sé tu, or sey tu, sea aquél,	Sí, fia, & sic tu, fia, & sic colui,	Sú, es, esto, sit, esto,	Be thou, Be he or let him be, &c.
Seámos nosótro, sed vosótro, seán aquéllos.	Siámo noi, siate voi, siano coloro.	Simus, sitis, esote, sint, sunt.	

## Subiunctive mode.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.
<b>Pres.</b> Como yo SE'A, tu seás, aquél sea,  seámos, seáys, seán.	<b>Quando</b> Io SI A, tu sij, fia, colui sia, sic,  fimo, fiate, sion, & fieno.	<b>Cum</b> sim, sis, &c.  when I am, &c.
<b>Imper.</b> fect. Como fuéra, sería, fuéste, fuéras, serías, fuésses, fuéra, sería, fuésses,  fuéramos, seríamos, fuéssimos, fuérades, seriades, fuéssedes, fuéran, serían, fuéssen.	<b>Quando</b> farei, fossi, fussi, faresti, fossi, fussi, farebbe, fosse, fusse,  faremmo, fossimo, fussimo, fareste, fosse, fusse, (fussiro) farebbono, faranno, fossero,	<b>Cum</b> essem, &c.  when I was.
<b>Pluper.</b> fect. Como áya, áyas, áya,  ayámos, ayáys, áyan,	<b>Quando</b> fui, fij, fía, fía,  fimo, fiate, sion,	<b>Cum</b> fuerim &c.  when I have been, &c.
<b>Pluper.</b> fect. Como uviéra or uviéste, uviéras or uviésses, uviéra or uviéste,  uviéramos, or uviéssimos, uviérades, or uviéssedes, uviéran or uviéssen,	<b>Sido</b> fossí, faréi, fossí, farésti, fossí, farebbe,  fossimo, faremmo, fossé, faréte, fosséro, farebbono,	<b>Cum</b> fuissim, &c.  when I had been, &c.
<b>Art.</b> Futur. Como fuére, fuéres, fuére,  fuéremos, fuéredes, fuéren,	<b>Quando</b> faró, farái, fará,  farémo, faréte, faránno,	<b>Cum</b> fuero, &c.  when I shall be, &c.

## Declining of Verbes.

Second Futur. Como	{ avré, avrás, avrá, avrémos avréys, avrán,	} SÍDO. Quando,	{ saré, sarás, saré, sarémo, saréte, saránmo,	} stato, cum { fuero, &c.	} When I shall be, &c.

## Infinitive mode, Present Tense.

SER,]	Esse,]	Esse,]	To be.
AVER' sÍDO,]	Esse stato,]	fuisse,]	Pluperfect and Pluperfect, To have bene.
			Future Tense.
Aucr de sér,	{ douer esse, bauer ad esse,	{ fore, futurum esse,	{ To be here- after.
			Gerund.
Siendo,]	Essendo,]	The Latine wants,]	In being.
SÍDO]	stato,]		Participle. bene.

1. Conjug.  
of Regular  
Verbes in  
AR, RE-  
VELAR

An Example of the first Coniugation of Verbes Regular in  
AR, as Revelár ] in Italian *Riveláre* ] Latine *Reueláre* ]  
in English to Reueale or discover, as Revelár,  
in Spanish is also as Rebelár, to rebell.

## Indicative mode

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.
Pres.	{ yo REVE'L O, tu Revelás, aquel revéla,	{ IO RIV'ELO, tu rivéli, colui rivéla,	{ Reuelo, reuelas, reuelas, &c.
	{ revelínos, revelays, revelan.	{ riveliámo, riveláte, riveláno,	{ I reueale, Thou reueale- st, &c.
Imper- fect.	{ reveláva, revelávas, reveláva,	{ riveláua, riveláui, riveláua,	{ reuelabam, &c.
	{ revelávamos, revelávades, revelávan,	{ riveláuamo, riveláuáte, riveláuano,	{ I did reueale.
First Perf.	{ revelé, reveláste, reveló,	{ rivelái, rivelásti, rivelo,	{ reuelani, &c.
	{ revelámos, revelástes, reveláron,	{ rivelámmo, rivelásti, rivelárono, riveláron, riveláro, rivelár.	{ I hanc reuea- led, &c.

second



# Declining of Verbes.

27

second perfect.	hé, o2 úve, ás, o2 uviste, á, o2 úvo,	reveládo.	ho, hai, há,	reveláto	revelau, &c.	I have reuea- led, &c.
	avémos, o2 uvimos avéys, o2 uvistes, án, o2 uviéron,		habbiámo, habbiáte, binno.			
Plu- perfect.	avia, avias, avía,	reveládo.	haueua, haueui, haueua,	reveláto	reuelaueram, &c.	I had reuea- led, &c.
	aviámos, aviades, avian,		haueuámo, haueuáte, haueuano,			
Futur.	revelaré, revelarás, revelará,		reuelaró, reuelarai, reuelará,		reuelabo, &c.	I shall or will reueale, &c.
	revelarémos, revelaréys, revelarán,		reuelarémo, reuelaréte, reuelaránno,			

Sometimes for the Future of this Indicative Mode, as well of this first Coniugation, as of all the rest, is used the Infinitive Mode, and the Present tense of the Verbe Auer, with a Particle going betweene them, as Revelar lo hé, Revelar lo has, Revelar lo á. And so of the other Coniugations, as Entender lo hé, Entender lo ás, oyr lo hé, oyr lo has, &c.

Nota.

## Imperative mode.

revéla tu, revéle aquel, Plu. revelémos nosóttros, reuelad vosóttros, revelan aquéllas,	reuelá tu, reuelá colui, reuelámo noi, reueláte voi, reuelámo coláro,	reuelá, reueláto reuelat, reuelato reuelémus, reuelatus, reuelent.	Reueale thou, be thou reuea- led, &c.
--	---	--	---

## Subiunctive mode with signes, Si, Como, o2 other Coniunction.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres. Como Yo Revéle, tu Revéles, aquí Revéle. Plurall. Revelémos, Reveléys, Revelén.	Quando Io Riueli, tu Riueli, colui Riueli. Plurall. Riuelamo, Riueláte, Riuelímo.	Cum Reuelam, &c.	When I doe Reueale, &c.
Imper- fect. Como Revelára, revelaría, revelásse, Reveláras, revelarias, revelásse, Revelára, revelaria, revelásse, Reveláramos, reveláramos, revelássemos, Revelárades, revelárades, revelásseades, Reveláran, revelarian, revelásen.	Quando Riuelassi, riuelarei, riuelaría, Riuelassi, riuelaresti, Riuelasse, riuelarebbe, riuelaría Riuelássimo, riuelássimo, Riuelaste, riuelaste, Riuelassero, riuelaribono, riuelaríano	Cum Reuelarem, &c.	When I did Reueale, &c.

Perfect

## Declining of Verbes.

perfect Como	{ áya, áyas, áya, ayámos, ayáys, áyan, }	Reveládo.	Quando	{ Hábbia, Hábbi, Hábbia, Hábbiámo, Hábbiate, Hábbiano, }	Rinelado. Cum	{ Revelauerim, &c. }	{ when I have revealed, &c. }
Plus perfect. Como	{ uviéra o: uviéffe, uviéras o: uviéffes, uviéra o: uviéffe, uviéramos o: uviéffemos, uviérades o: uviéffedes, uviéran o: uviéffen, }	Reveládo.	Quando	{ Hauéffi, hauéffi, hauéffes, hauéffim, hauéffite, hauéffero, }	Rinelado. Cum	{ Reuelassem, &c. }	{ when I had revealed, &c. }
First future Como	{ Reveláre, Reveláres, Reveláre, Reveláremos, Reveláredes, Reveláren, }	Reveládo.	Quando	{ Haueró, hauerai, hauerá, haueremo, hauerete, haueranno, }	Rinelado. Cum	{ Reuelauero, &c. }	{ when I shall o: will Re- ueale, &c. }
Secōd future. Como	{ uviére o: avré, uviéres o: avrés, uviére o: avrá, uierémos o: avrémos, uieredes o: avréys, uierén o: avrán, }	Reve- lido.	Quando	{ Haueró, hauerai, hauerá, haueremo, hauerete, haueranno, }	Rinelado. Cum	{ Reuelauero, &c. }	{ when I shall o: will Re- ueale, &c. }

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

Revelár, ] Rinelare, ] Reuelare, ] to Reueale o: discover:

Peterperfect tense.

Aver reveládo, ] Hauerrinelado, ] Reuelauisse, ] to have revealed.

The Future tense.

Avér o Esperár de Revelár, { Dower Rinelare, Effere per } to Reueale  
hereafter.

Gerund.

Reveládo, ] Rinelando, ] Reuelando, ] in Reuealing.

Supine of the Active Signification.

a Revelár, ] a Rinelare, ] Reuelatum ] to be about to Reueals.

Supine of the Passive Signification.

De fcr Revelado ] D'effere Rinelato ] Reuelatu ] to be Reuealed.

Participle of the Present tense and Active voice.

El que Revela, ] Rinelante, ] Reuelans ] Reuealing.

Participle of the Peter tense and Passive voice.

Reveládo, ] Rinelato, ] Reuelatu, ] Reuealed.

All verbs which have their Infinitives in AR, are declined in all points like this here declined, except the Irregulars here following in ar.



## Declining of Verbes.

29

An Example of the second Coniugation of verbes  
*Regular in E R, as Entendér, in Italian Intendere,*  
*Latine Intelligere, to Understand.*

2. Coniug.  
of Regular  
verbs in er  
Entendér.

## Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	yo ENTIE'NDO,	Io Intendo	Intelligo, &c.	{ I do Under-stand, &c.
	tu Entiendes,	tu Intendi,		
Plurall.	aquel Entiende.	colui Intende.		{
	Entendemos,	Plu. Intendiamo.		
Imper- fect.	Entendéys,	Intendete,		{
	Entienden.	Intendino.		
Imper- fect.	Entendia,	Intendéua & Intendéa,	Intelligēbam, &c.	{ I did Under-stand, &c.
	Entendias,	Intendēui,		
First perfect.	Entendia,	Intendēua & Intendēa,		{
	Entendiamos,	Intendēuāmo,		
First perfect.	Entendiastes,	Intendēuāte,		{
	Entendian,	Intendēuano.		
First perfect.	Entendí,	Intéfi,	Intellexi, &c.	{ I have Un-derstood, &c.
	Entendiste,	Intendisti,		
First perfect.	Entendí,	Intéfe,		{
	Entendimos,	Intendēmmo,		
Second perfect.	Entendistis,	Intendēste,		{
	Entendieron.	Intefero.		
Second perfect.	He oꝝ úve,	HO	Intellexi, &c.	{ I have Un-derstood, &c.
	ás oꝝ uviste,	bái		
Second perfect.	á oꝝ úvo.	ba	Intéfo.	{
	Entendido.			
Second perfect.	hémos oꝝ uvimos,	babbiamo		{
	avéys oꝝ uvistes	havēte	Intéfi.	
Second perfect.	án oꝝ uviéron,	h.anno		{
Pluper- fect tēse	Avia,	havēua	Intellexeram, &c.	{ I had Un-derstood, &c.
	avias,	havēui	Intéfo.	
Pluper- fect tēse	avia.	havēua		{
	Entendido.			
Pluper- fect tēse	Avíamos,	havēuāmo		{
	aviades,	havēuāte	Intéfi.	
Pluper- fect tēse	avian,	havēuano		{
Futur.	Entenderé,	Intenderó,	Intelligam, &c.	{ I shall oꝝ will Understand.
	Entenderás,	Intenderai,		
Futur.	Entenderá,	Intenderá,		{
	Entenderémos,	Intenderémo,		
Futur.	Entenderéys,	Intenderéte,		{
	Entenderán,	Intenderanno.		

## Imperative mode.

Entiende tu,	Intendi tu.	Intellige, Intelligito,	Understand thou,
Entiende aquel.	Intendi colui,	Intelligat, Intelligito.	Understand he oꝝ let him understand.
Entendámos nosóttros,	Intendiamo noi,		
Entendéd vosóttros,	Intendete voi,		
Entiéndan aquellos.	Inténdano coloro.		

Second

Entender.

*Second Coniugation of Regular Verbes in ER, as ENTENDER.*  
**Subiunctive mode.**

Spanish.		Italian.		Latine.	
Pres. Como	yo ENTIE'NDA, tu entiendas, aquel entienda, <b>Plu.</b> entendamos, entendays, entiendan.	Quando	yo INTENDA, tu intendi, colui intenda, <b>Plu.</b> intendiamo, intendiate, intendano,	Cum	intel- ligam &c. When I doe vnder stand, &c.
Imper fect. Como	entendiera, entenderia, entendiesse, entendieras, entenderias, entendiesseis, entendiera, entenderia, entendiesseis, <b>Plu.</b> entendiéramos, entenderíamos, entendiésemos, entendiérades, entenderíades, entendiéssedes, entendiéran, entenderían, entendiesen.	Quando	intenderai, intenderia, intenderessi, intenderessi, intenderai, intenderessi, intenderabbe, intenderai, intenderessi, <b>Plu.</b> intenderemo, intenderessimo, intenderessi, intenderessimo, intenderébbero, intenderemo, intenderessero,	Cum	intel- ligem &c. When I did vnder stand.
Perf. Como	aya, ayas, aya, <b>Plu.</b> ayamos, ayays, ayan.	Quando	habbia, habbi, habbia, <b>Plu.</b> habbiamo, habbiate, habbiano,	Cum	intel- lex- erim &c. When I haue vnder stood, &c.
Plus perfect. Como	uviéra, o3 uviéste, uviéras, o3 uviésteis, uviéra, o3 uviéste, <b>Plu.</b> uviéramos, o3 uviéssimos, uviérades, o3 uviéssedes, uviéran, o3 uviéssen,	Quando	hauerai, & haueressi, haueressi, & haueressi, hauerébbe, & haueressi, <b>Plu.</b> hauerémmo, & haueréssimo, haueréste, & haueréste, hauerébbero, & haueréssero,	Cum	intel- lexis- sem &c. When I had vnder stood.
First future. Como	Entendiere, entendieres, entendiere, <b>Plu.</b> entendiremos, entendiredes, entendieren.	Quando		Cum	intel- lexero &c. When I shal o3 wil vnder stand, &c.
Second future. Como	uviére, o3 auré, uviéres, o3 aurás, uviére, o3 aurá, <b>Plu.</b> uviéremos, o3 aurémos, uviéredes, o3 auréys, uviéren, o3 aurán,	Quando	hauero, hauerai, hauera, <b>Plu.</b> hauerémo, haueréte, haueranno,	Cum	intel- lexero &c. When I shal vnder stand, &c.

**Infinitive mood Present Tense.**Entender, ] *Intendere,* ] *Intelligere* ] To vnderstand.**Preterperfect Tense.**auér entendido, ] *hauer inteso,* ] *intellexisse,* ] To haue vnderstood.**The Future Tense.**

aver o Esperar de entender, } *aduer intendere,* } *intelleclurum,*  
*hauer ad intendere,* } *to vnderstand*  
*Esse per intendere,* } *hereafter.*

**Gerund**entendiendo, ] *intendendo,* ] *intelligendo* ] In vnderstanding.**Supines of the active voice.**a entender, ] *ad intendere* ] *intelleclum* ] To vnderstand.**Supine of the passive voice.**de ser entendido, ] *de essere inteso,* ] *intelleclu* ] To be vnderstood.

Participle



# Declining of Verbes.

31

[I que entiendo,] Participle of the active voice and present Tense.  
 [intendente] [intelligens,] Understanding.  
 [entendido,] Participle of the Preter tense and passive voice.  
 [inteso] [intellectus] Understood.

All Verbes whose Infinitives end in er, are in all points declined like this, except the irregular in er following.

An Example of the third and last Coniugation of Regular verbs 3. and last  
 in Ir or Yr, as ABRIR, in Italian *Aperire*, Latine *Aperire*, to  
 Open, Oyr, Italian *Idire*, Latine *Audire*, to Heare.

conjugation  
 of Verbes  
 Regular in  
 Ir, or Yr.

## Indicative moode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	OYO, y OYGO,	ODO,	Audio, &c.	I doe heare, &c.
	oyes, oye.	odi, ode.		
Plur.	oymos, oyes, oyen.	Plur. odiamo, odite, odon.		
Imper- fect.	Oya, oyas, oya.	Idia, idiai, idia.	Audiebam, &c.	I did heare, &c.
	oyamos, oyades, oyan.	Idiamo, Idiate, Idiano.		
First Perf.	Oy, oyste, oyo.	Idi & ydi, ydisti, ydi.	Audiui, &c.	I have heard, &c.
	oymos, oystes, oyeron.	Idimmo, ydiste, (ro, ydir. ydirono, ydiron, ydi-		
Second Perf.	He, oz ove, as, oz uviste, a, oz uvo.	Ha, ha, ha,	Audiui, &c.	I have heard, &c.
	avemos, oz uvimos, avays, oz uvistes, an, oz uvieron,	Oydo. habbiamo, haueto, hainno.	Idito.	
Pluper- fect.	avia, avias, avia.	hauetia, haueti, hauetia,	Audieram, &c.	I had heard.
	aviamos, aviades, avian.	Oydo. hauetiammo, hauetate, hauetiano.	Idito.	
future.	oyre, oyras, oyra,	ydire, ydirai, ydira,	Audiam, &c.	I shall oz will heare, &c.
	oyremos, oyreys, oyran,	ydiremo, ydirite, ydiranno,		

## Imperative moode.

Impe- rative moode.	Oye tu,	odi tu,	audi, audito,	Heare thou,
	oyga, oz oya aquel,	oda colui,	audiat, audito,	Heare he oz let him heare, &c.
	oyamos nosotros,	odiamo noi,	&c.	
	oyd vosotros,	odite voi,		
	oyan, oz oygan aquellos,	odano coloro,		

OYR  
declined.*The Third and last Coniugation of verbes Regular in IR, and YR.*

## Subiunctive mode

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
<b>Pres.</b> Como	O'Y A, o: oyga, oyas, o: oygas, oya, o: oyga,	O' D A, odi, oda.	Audiam, &c.	when I heare.
<b>Imper</b> <b>fect.</b> Como	Oyera, oyeria, oyelle, oyeras, oyerias, oyelles, oyera, oyeria, oyelle, oyéramos, oyéramos, oyélemos, oyérais, oyérais, oyéredes, oyéran, oyéran, oyélen.	Quando Ediamo, ediate, edano. Edissi, vdiréi, vderia, vdisi, vderissi, vdisse, vderébbe, vderia. Edissimo, vdirémo, vdisse, vderéste, vdissero, vderébbono, vderiano.	Cum Audirem, &c.	when I did heare, &c.
<b>Per-</b> <b>fect.</b> Como	A'ya, áyas, aya, ayámos, ayáys, ayan,	Habbia, habbi, habbia. Quando habbiamo, habbiate, habbiano.	Audie- rim, &c.	when I haue heard, &c.
<b>plupe.</b> Como	Uviéra, o: uviéfle, uviéras, o: uviéflés, uviéra, o: uviéfle, uviéramos, o: uviéflamos, uviérais, o: uviéflés, uviéran, o: uviéflen,	oydo. Quando Hauéssí, hauereí, haueria, hauéssi, hauereissi, hauéssse, hauereébbe, haueria, hauéssimo, hauereémo. hauéste, hauereéste, hauéssero, hauereébbono, haueriano.	Cum vdió. Audiuissim, &c.	when I had heard, &c.
<b>First</b> <b>futur.</b> Como	Oyére, oyéres, oyére, oyéremos, oyéredes, Oyéren.	Audiero, &c.	Cum Audiero, &c.	when I shall heare, &c.
<b>Second</b> <b>Future</b> Como	Uviére, o: auré, uviéres, o: aurás, uviére, o: aurá, uviéremos, o: aurémos, uviéredes, o: auréys, uviéren, o: aurán,	oydo. Quando Haueró, hauerai, hauerá, hauerémo, hauerete, haueranno,	Cum Audiero, &c.	when I shall heare.

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

O Y'R, ]	Vdire, ]	Audire, ]	to heare.
avér Oydo	hauer Vdito, ]	Audiuisse, ]	to haue heard.
avér de Oyr,	douer Vdire, hauer ad Vdire, esser per Vdire.	Auditum esse, ]	to heare hereafter.

Gerund



Gerund.			
Oyendo, ]	Oyendo, ]	Audiendo, ]	in Hearing.
	Supine of the Active voice.		
a Oyr, ]	Vidre, ]	Auditum, ]	to Heare.
	Supine of the Passive voice.		
de ser Oydo, ]	d'essere V'dito, ]	Audita, ]	to be Heard.
	Participle of the Active voice and Present tense.		
el que Oye, ]	chi Ode, ]	Audiens, ]	Hearing.
	Participle of the Passive voice and Preter tense.		
Oydo, ]	V'dito, ]	Auditus, ]	Heard.

All verbes whose Infinitives end in *ir, or yr*, are declined in every respect like this: except those in *ir* and *yr*, in the Irregulars following.

## Of Verbes Passives.

The Spaniards, as the Italian and French, decline their Verbes passives with their Verbe *Sum, es, fui*, and the Participle of the Preter tense, as of *Revelar*, to reveale: *toy revelado*, I am revealed.

The Spanish formeth the Participle Passive of the first and third Conjugation of their Infinitive mood, by taking away *r*, and putting to do, as of *Revelar*, *Revelado*, *Pedir*, to require, *Pedido*, required, *Oyr*, to heare, *Oydo*, heard.

But in the second Conjugation they take away *r* as before, and change the last *e* into *y* or *i*, and adde to do as aforesaid, as *Leer*, to read, *Leydo*: *Entender*, to understand, *Entendido*.

## A Verbe Passive thus declined.

## Indicative mood.

Spanish.		Italian.		Latine.	
Pres.	YO SOY,	IO SONO,	} Revelato.	Revelor,	} I am Revealed.
	tu eres,	tusi,		Revelaris,	
Pres.	aquel es,	colui e,	} Revelato.	&c.	
	Plu.	Plu.			
Pres.	Somos,	Siamo,	} Revelati.		} Revealed,
	soys,	siete,			
Pres.	son,	sono,	} Revelati.		
Im-perfect.	E'ra,	E'ra,	} Revelato.	Revelabar,	} I was Revealed,
	eras,	eri,		Revelabaris,	
Im-perfect.	era,	era,	} Revelato.	&c.	
Im-perfect.	éramos,	eramo, & eranemo,	} Revelati.		} Revealed, &c.
	érades,	erite,			
Im-perfect.	éran,	erano,	} Revelati.		
First Perf.	Fuy,	Fui,	} Revelato.	Revelatus	} I have been Revealed, &c.
	fueste,	fosti,		sum vel	
First Perf.	fue,	fu,	} Revelato.	fui, &c.	
First Perf.	fuyamos,	fúmo,	} Revelati.		} Revealed,
	fuiestes,	foste,			
First Perf.	fueron,	furono, fúro, fúron	} Revelati.		
Second perfect.	HE, or úve	Sido	} Revelato.	Revelatus	} I have been Revealed, &c.
	as, or uviste	Sido		sum vel	
Second perfect.	a, or úvo	Sido	} Revelato.	fui, idem ut	
		do.		antea, &c.	
Second perfect.	Hémos, or uvimos	Sido	} Revelati.		} Revealed,
	avéis, or uvistes	Sido			
Second perfect.	an, or uvieron,	Sido	} Revelati.		
		dos.			

## Declining of Verbes Passives.

3 <sup>d</sup> pers. perfect.	Avia Sido,	} Revelado.	E'ra Stato,	} Revelato.	Revelatus	} I had bene Revealed, &c.
	avias Sido,		eri Stato,		erant vel fuerant, &c.	
	avianos Sido,	} Revelados.	erantimo Stati,	} Revelati.		
	avandes Sido,		erante Stati,			
future.	Seré,	} Revelado.	Saró,	} Revelato.	Revelator,	} I shall or will be Revealed.
	serás,		sarás,		&c.	
	Serémos,	} Revelados.	Sarémo,	} Revelati.		
	seréys,		saréte,			
	serán,		saranno,			
Imperative mod.						
	Sé tu,	} Revelado.	Sí, & sí tu,	} Revelato.	Revelare,	} be thou Revealed,
	sea aquí,		sí, & síe colui,		Revelatur,	
	Seámos,	} Revelados.	siamo,	} Revelati.	&c.	
	sed,		siate,			
	Sean,		siano,			
Subjunctive mod.						
Pres. Como	yo Séa	} Revelado.	lo Séa	} Reve-	Revelar, &c.	} when I am Revealed, &c.
	tu séas		tus, & sía		lato.	
	aquel séa	} Revelados.	colui séa, & sic	} Reve-	Cum	
	Seámos		siamo		lato.	
	seáys	} Revelados.	siate	} Revelati.		
	seán		siano & siano			
Im- perf. Como	Fuéra, sería, fuéffe	} Reve-	Fóssé, fússé, sareí, sería	} Reve-	Revelarer,	} when I was Revealed, &c.
	fuéras, serías, fuéffes		fósses, fússes, sareís, serías		lato.	
	fuéra, sería, fuéffe	} Reve-	fóssé, fússé, sarebbe, sería	} Reve-	Cum	
	Fuéramos, seríamos, fuéffemos		fóssimo, fússimo, saremmo		lato.	
	fuérades, seríades, fuéffedes	} Reve-	fóssse, fússse, sareste,	} Revelati		
	fuéran, serían, fuéffén		fóssero, fússero, sarebbono,		(sariano)	
Perf. Como	A'ya Sido	} Revelado.	Sia Stato	} Revelato	Revelatus	} When I have bene Revealed, &c.
	ayas Sido		sí, & sía Stato		sim vel fuerim, &c.	
	aya Sido	} Revelados.	sí, & síe Stato	} Revelati	Cum	
	ayámos, Sido		siamo Stati			
	ayáys Sido	} Revelados.	siate Stati	} Revelati		
	ayan Sido		siano Stati			
3 <sup>d</sup> pers. perfect.	Uviéra or uviéffe	} Revelado.	Fóssé, fússé, sareí, sería Stato	} Revelato	Revelatus	} when I had bene Revealed, &c.
	uviéras or uviéffes		fósses, fússes, sareís, serías Stato		essim vel fuissim, &c.	
	uviéra or uviéffe	} Revelados.	fóssé, fússé, sarebbe Stato	} Revelati	Cum	
	uviéramos, or uviéffemos		fóssimo, fússimo, saremmo Stati			
	uviérades, or uviéffedes	} Revelados.	fóssse, fússse, sareste Stati	} Revelati		
	uviéran, or uviéffén		fóssero, fússero, sarebbono Stati		(sariano)	
future.	Fuére or uviére or avré	} Revelado.	Saró Stato	} Revelato.	Revelatus	} when I shall be Revealed, &c.
	fuéres or uviéres or avras		sarai Stato		ero vel fueró, &c.	
	fuére or uviéres or avra	} Revelados.	sará Stato	} Revelati	Cum	
	fuéremos or uviéremos or avrémos		sarémo Stati			
	fuéredes or uviéredes or avréys	} Revelados.	saréte Stati	} Revelati		
	fuéren or uviéren or avrán		saranno Stati			

Infinitive



# Declining of Verbes Irregular.

35

## Infinitive in mode Present tense.

Sei Reveládo,] *Revelari, effere Revelato, Revelari,* to be Revealed.

## Buter tense.

Avér Sido Reveládo,] *Effere stato Revelato, Revelatum effere el fuiffe,* to have been Revealed.

## Future tense.

Avér de sér } *Dover effere Revelato, Revelatum iri vel* to be Revealed  
Reveládo. } *haber ad effere Revelato, Revelandum esse,* hereafter.

## Participle of the Present tense.

Lo que es Reveládo,] *Revelato, Revelatus,* that which is Revealed.

## Participle of the future tense.

Lo que ha de ser } *Havendo ad effere Revelato, Reme-* to be Revealed  
Reveládo, } *havendo a Revelari, landus,* hereafter.

After this manner in every respect all other verbes Passives, Regular or Irregular of what Conjugation soever, are to be declined as of the second Conjugation, Soy Vendido, Poseydo, Defendido, and of the third Conjugation, as Soy Oydo, Corregido, Seguido, and so of the rest.

Note that this accusative case Se of the Pronoun turned with the third Person of verbes Passives, make them have the Passive signification, as Dice, he saith, Se dice, it is said.

Nota.

Now will I handle and intreat of the verbes Irregular (in which is found hardness and difficultie to the learner for their declining) in such order and manner that he may with his ease or very little paine decline any of them whatsoever: for which purpose and for whose ease and profit, I have to my great labour brought them into the forme as followeth, and have so diligently searched, that no one of them needfull to his use (as I hope) shall be wanting, not here following set downe, that my labours may be answerable to my desire, and the learners profit to my paines.

## The first Coniugation of Verbes Irregular in A R, as D A R, in Italian and Latine Dare, to Give.

1. Coming of Verbes Irregular in A R.

The verbes Irregular like as the Regular divided into three Conjugations, the first in ar, the second in er, the third in ir or yr.

The verbes Irregular differ from the Regular above going in the first Preterperfect of the Indicative, and Preterimperfect of the Subjunctive, as by the examples following you may see.

Nota.

## Indicative mood.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	yo DOY, tu Dás, aquel Da.	io DO, tu Dai, colui Da.	Do, Das, Dat, &c.	I doe give, &c.
	Plur. Dámos, Dáys, Dán.	Plur. Diamo or Dámo, Date, Danno.		
Imperf.	Dáva, Dávas, Dáva.	Dáva, Dái, Dána.	Dabam, &c.	I did give, &c.
	Dávamos, Dávades, Dávan.	Davamo, Davate, Davano.		
First Perfect.	Dí, Diste, Dió.	Diedi & Dei, Dési. Diede & Dette,	Dedi, &c.	I have Given, &c.
	Dimos, Distes, Diéron.	Démuxo, Desto Diéron.		

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

second perfect.	{ yo lle tu ás aquel á { hēmos avey's án	Dádo.	{ Ho hai ba { habbiāmo hanete hānno	Dato,	{ Dedi, &c. vi supra. { I have Gi- uen, &c. as next above.
Plus per.	{ Avía, Avías, Avía, { Avíamos, Aviades, Avían,	Dádo.	{ Hanéua bauéui bauéua { hanenāmo hanenāte hancuano	Dato.	{ Dederam, &c. { I had Giuen, &c.
Futur.	{ Daré, Darás, Dará. { Darémos, Daréys, Darán.		{ Daró, Darái, Dará, { Darémo, Daréte, Darāmo.		{ Dabo, &c. { I shall or will Giue, &c.
Imperative mod.					
	{ Dá tu, Dé aquel. { Démos, Dád, Dén.		{ Da tu, Dia colui. { Diāmo, Date, Diāno.		{ Da dato, Des dato, &c. { Giue thou, &c.

## Subjunctive mod.

Spanish.		Italian.		Latine.	
Pres. Como	{ YO De, tu des, aquel De,	Quando	{ IO Dia, tu dia, colui dia.	Cum	{ Dem, &c.
	{ démos, déys, dén,		{ diámo, diáto, diáno,		
Imper. Como	{ diéra, daría, diéffe, diéras, darías, diéffes, diéra, daría, diéffe,	Quando	{ diífi, daréi, daría, diéffi, daréffi, diéffe, darébbe, daría,	Cum	{ Darem, &c.
	{ diéramos, dariamos, diéffemos, diérades, dariades, diéffedes, diéran, darían, diéffen.		{ diéffimo, darinmo, diéffe, daréffe, diéffero, darébbono, dariano,		
Pres. Como	{ áya, áyas, áya,	Quando	{ babbia, babbi, babbia,	Cum	{ Dederim, &c.
	{ ayámos, ayáys, áyan,		{ babbiamo, babbiate, babbiano.		

Supers.



# Declining of Verbes Irregular.

37

<b>Pluperfect.</b> <b>Como</b>	{ uviéra, o3 uviéffe, uviéros, o3 uviéffes, uviéra, o3 uviéffe, uviéramos, o3 uviéffemos, uviérades, o3 uviéffedes, uviéran, o3 uviéffen,       }	<b>Quando</b> { haueffi, hauei, haueffi, haueffi, haueffe, haueffebbe, haueffimo, haueffimmo, haueffte, haueffte, haueffero, haueffebbono,       }	<b>Cum</b> { Didiffem, &c. Datto. Datto. Cum Dedero, &c.       }	{ When I had gi- uen, &c. When I had giue, &c.       }
<b>Future.</b> <b>Como</b>	{ Diére, Diéres, Diére, Diéremos, Diéredes, Diéren.       }	<b>Quando</b> { hauei, hauei, hauei, hauei, hauei, hauei, hauei, hauei, hauei, hauei, hauei, hauei,       }	<b>Cum</b> { Dedero, &c. Datto. Datto. Cum Dedero, &c.       }	{ When I had giue, &c.       }

## Infinitive mood Present tense.

D A' R, ] Dare, ] Dare, ] To giue.

**Pluperfect tense.**

avér Dado, { hauei dato, } To haue giuen.  
 { hauei dare, }  
 { hauei a dare. } Dediffe.

**Gerund.**

Dando, ] dando, ] dando, ] In giuing.

**Participle of the Present tense, and Passive voice.**

El que da, ] Dando, ] Dando, ] giuing.

**Participle of the Pluper tense and Passive voice.**

Dado, ] Dado, ] Dado, ] giuen.

**Participle of the Future tense.**

El que ha, o3 espera de dar ] Effere per dare ] Daturum esse ] to giue hereafter.

El 3. 1. 1.

These here under written only differ from the Regular verbes in the first Pluperfect tense of their Indicative mood, which alway change Car of the Infinitive into que, and gar into que, as

Infinitives.	Pres.	Pluperfects.
Acercár, to come nere,	yo Acerco,	Acerqué.
Cercár, to compass,	yo Cérco,	Cerqué.
Cargár, to charge, to burden,	yo Cárgo,	Cargué.
Achucár, to make little,	yo Achico,	Achiqué.
Ahogár, to choke, to drown,	yo Ahogo,	Ahogué.
Allegár, to come nere,	yo Allégo,	Allegué.
Ahorcár, to hang vp,	yo Ahórco,	Ahorqué.
Anegár, to drown,	yo Anégo,	Anegué.
Arrancár, to plucke vp,	yo Arranco,	Arranqué.
Arremangár, to tucke vp,	yo Arremángo,	Arremangué.
Arriscár, to endanger,	yo Arrisco,	Arrisqué.
Apesgár, to weigh downe,	yo Apésigo,	Apesgué.
Asulcár, to furrow,	yo Asúlco,	Asulqué.
Bogár, to rowe,	yo Bógo,	Bogué.
Bolcár, to tumble downe,	yo Bólco,	Bolqué.
Castigár, to chastise,	yo Castigo,	Castigué.
Calcár, to hithe vnder feet,	yo Cálco,	Calqué.
Colgár, to hang,	yo Cuélgo,	Colqué.
Cocár, to gape at, to mocke,	yo Cuéco,	Coqué.
Cavalgár, to ride,	yo Caválgo,	Cavalgué.
Chocár, to sucke,	yo Chuéco,	Choqué.
Denegár, to deny,	yo Deniégo,	Denegué.
Derrocár, to throw downe,	yo Derruécó,	Derrogué.
Descolgár, to unhang,	yo Descuélgo,	Descolgué.
Desfogár, to cool,	yo Desfuégo,	Desfogué.

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Infinitives.	Pres.	Preterperfects.
Embarcár, to embark,	yo Embárco,	Embarqué.
Desligár, to untie,	yo Desligo,	Desligué.
Embaucár, to cast into a hole,	yo Embauco,	Embauqué.
Embocár, <i>idem</i> ,	yo Embóco,	Emboqué.
Desnegár, to recant,	yo Desniego,	Desnegué.
Enarcár, to chest up,	yo Enárco,	Enarqué.
Divulgár, to publish,	yo Divúlgo,	Divulgué.
Empegár, to pitch,	yo Empiégo,	Empegué.
Fabricár, to frame,	yo Fabrico,	Fobriqué.
Encenegár, to dust,	yo Encienégo,	Encenegué.
Fregár, to rub,	yo Friégo,	Fregué.
Holgár, to be glad,	yo Huélgo,	Holgué.
Mancár, to want,	yo Máncó,	Manqué.
Jugár, to play,	yo Juégo,	Jugué.
Marcár, to mark,	yo Márco,	Marqué.
Mercár, to buy,	yo Miérco,	Merqué.
Mascár, to chew,	yo Máscó,	Masqué.
Mendigár, to beg,	yo Mendigo,	Mendigué.
Navegár, to sail,	yo Navégo,	Navegué.
Otorgár, to grant,	yo Otórgo,	Otorgué.
Peliscár, to pinch,	yo Pelíco,	Peliqué.
Pagár, to pay,	yo Págó,	Pagué.
Pelcár, to fish,	yo Pélco,	Peiqué.
Plegár, to fold,	yo Pliégo,	Pliegué.
Regár, to water,	yo Riégo,	Regué.

These here above and their like in all other Tenses varie nothing from the verbes regular in as afoze going, as Juzgár, to iudge, the Indicative present Tense, Juzgo, I iudge, Preterimperfect, Juzgava, first Preterperfect, Julgué, the second Perfect, He Juzgado, the Preterperfect, avia Juzgado, Future, Juzgaré. Imperative, Juzga. The Present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive, Oxalá or Si Juzgue, the Preterimperfect Tense, Juzgara, juzgaría, juzgasse, Perfect, áya juzgado, Pluperfect, uviera or uviesse Juzgado, Future, Juzgaré. Infinitive, Juzgar. Participle, Juzgado.

## ESTAR

Of Verbes Irregular the first Conjugation in AR, as Estár,] in Italian *Essere*,] in Latine *Esse*,] To be, to stand.

## Indicative mood.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.
Pres.	YO ESTO'Y, tu estás, aquel está,	IO STO, tu stai, colui sta,	Sto, &c. I stand, or I am, &c.
	estamos, estáis, están.	stamo, státe, stanno.	
Imperfect.	estáva, estávas, estáva,	stávo, stáni, stávo,	Stabam, &c. I was, or did stand, &c.
	estávamos, estávades, estávan.	stavámo, staváto, stavano.	
First Perfect.	estúve, estuviste, estuvo,	fetti, & sei, fetti, fetti,	feti, &c. I have bene, or have stood, &c.
	estuvimos, estuvistes, estuvieron.	fimo, feste, fettera.	

Second



# Declining of Verbes Irregular.

39

Second Perfect.	yo Hé, tu ás, aquel há,	} Estado.	{ fóno, fêi, é,	} Stato.	{ feti, &c. vifupra.	{ I have been, or have stood, &c.
	hemos, avéys, án,		{ fiámo, fête, fóno,		{ Stati.	
Pluperfect.	avia, avias, avia,	} Estado.	{ éva, éri, éva,	} Stato.	{ feteram, &c.	{ I had borne, or had stood, &c.
	avíamos, aviades, avian,		{ erauámo, erauate, évano,		{ Stati.	
Future.	Eftaré, efarás, efará,		{ flaró, flarái, flará,		{ Stabo, &c.	{ I fhall or will ftand or be, &c.
	eftarémos, eftaréys, eftarán.		{ flarémo, flaréte, flarámo.			

## Imperative mod.

Impe- rative mod.	Eftá, ftá, efté,	{ flá, fláa, fiámo, fláa, fiámo,	{ flá, fláto, &c.	{ bee thou, or ftand thou, &c.
	eftémos, eftád, eftén.			

## Subjunctive mode.

Pres. Como	Spanish. Efté, Eftés, Efté, Eftémos, Eftéys, Eftén.	Quando	Italian. Stia, Stij, Stia, Stiámo, Stiáte, Stiano,	Cum	Latin. Stem, &c.	{ when I am or ftád, &c.
Imper fect. Como	Eftuviéra, eftaría, eftuviéffe, Eftuviéras, eftarías, eftuviéffes, Eftuviéra, eftaría, eftuviéffe, Eftuviéramos, eftariamos, eftuviéffamos, Eftuviérades, eftariades, eftuviéffedes, Eftuviéran, eftarían, eftuviéffen.	Quando	Starei, ftéffi, ftaría, Staréffi, ftéffi, Starébbe, ftéffi, ftaría, Starémo, ftéffimo, Staréffe, ftéffe, Starébbono, ftaríamo, ftéffero.	Cum	Starem, &c.	{ when I ftood or was, &c.
Perf. Como	A'ya, áyas, áya, Ayámos, Ayáyis, áyan,	} eftádo. Quando	{ Sia, Sij, Sia, Siaámo, Siaáte, Siano,	} Stato. } Stati.	{ Steterim, &c.	{ when I have ftood or been, &c.

uviéra,

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Pluper. Como	uviéra, o, uviéssé, uviéras, o, uviésses, uviéra, o, uviéssé, uviéramos, o, uviéssémos, uviérades, o, uviéssedes, uviéran, o, uviéssen,	Estado. Quando	Fossí, Fossí, Fossí, Fóssimo, Fosse, Fosséro.	Státo. Cum Státi.	Stetissim, &c. Stetiro, &c. Stati.	When I had bene, or stood, &c. a i
First Future. Como	Estuviére, Estuviéres, Estuviére, Estuviéremos, Estuviéredes, Estuviéren,	Quando	Saró, Sarai, Sarai, Sarémo, Saréte, Saránno.	Státo. Cum Stati.	Stetiro, &c. Stati.	When I shal or wil stand or be, &c.
Second Future. Como	uviére, o, avré, uviéres, o, avrás, uviére, o, avrá. uviéremos, o, avrémos, uviéredes, o, avréys, uviéren, o, avrán,	Estado.	Saró, Sarai, Sarai, Sarémo, Saréte, Saránno.	Státo. Cum Stati.	Stetiro, &c. Stati.	When I shal or wil be or stand &c.

## Infinitive mod Present tense.

Estár, ]	Stare, ]	Stare, ]	to stand or be.
Interperfect tense.			
avér Estado, ]	haber Státo, ]	Stetissí, ]	to have stood or bene.
Future tense.			
avér or esperár d'estár, ]	doner Stare, ]	Staturum esse, ]	to stand hereafter.
Gerund.			
Estádo, ]	Stando, ]	Stando, ]	In standing or being.
Participle.			
Estádo, ]	Stato, ]	Statu, ]	Stood or bene.

These Verbes following make their Present tense of the Indicative, by changing the last syllable save one of the Infinitive, the e into ie, and the o into ve, as

Infinitive.	Pres.	Interperfect.
Affentár, to sit, to set,	yo alliento,	Alsenté.
Approvár, to allow,	yo approúeo,	Aprové.
Sentár, to sit,	yo siento,	Senté.
Sonár, to sound,	yo suono,	Soné.
Conservár, to keepe,	yo consérvo,	Conservé.
Attonár, to thunder,	yo attruéo,	Attoné.
Cegár, to make blinde,	yo ciego,	Ciegué.
Contár, to reckon,	yo cuento,	Conté.
Cerrár, to shut, to locke,	yo ciérro,	Cerré.
Degollár, to kill, to behead,	yo deguéllo,	Degollé.
Enterrár, to put in the earth,	yo entierro,	Enterré.
Derrocár, to throw downe,	yo deruéco,	Derroqué.
Colgár, to hang,	yo cuelgo,	Colgué.
Desterrár, to banish,	yo destierro,	Desterré.
Desollár, to pounce,	yo desuéllo,	Desollé.
Hollár, to tread on,	yo huéllo,	Hollé.
Encesár, to bend,	yo entieso,	Entesé.
Segár, to cut,	yo siego,	Sequé.
Resollár, to breathe,	yo resuéllo,	Resollé.
Resolgár, to tremble,	yo resuelgo,	Resolgué.
Temblár, to tremble,	yo trémbo,	Temblé.
Tentár, to assay,	yo tiénto,	Tenté.
Tropecár, to stumble,	yo tropiégo,	Tropecé.
Adreçgár, to make ready.	yo adreçgo,	Adreçcé.



Of Verbes Irregular of the first Conjugation in AR, as ANDAR,  
In Italian, *Andare*, in Latine, *Ire*, *Gradi*, to Go.

ANDAR

## Indicative mod.

Spanish.		Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	A'ndo, ánda, ánda,	<i>Vo, &amp; Vado,</i> <i>Vai,</i> <i>Va,</i>	<i>Eo,</i> <i>is, &amp;c.</i>	<i>I Go,</i> <i>thou Goest, &amp;c.</i>
	Andámos, andáys, ándan.	<i>Andiamo,</i> <i>Andate,</i> <i>Vanno.</i>		
Imper- fect.	Andáva, Andávas, Andáva,	<i>Andava,</i> <i>Andavi,</i> <i>Andava,</i>	<i>Ibam, &amp;c.</i>	<i>I did goe, &amp;c.</i>
	Andávamos, Andávades, Andávan.	<i>Andavamo,</i> <i>Andavate,</i> <i>Andavano.</i>		
First Perf.	Andúve, Anduviste, Andúvo,	<i>Andii,</i> <i>Andisti,</i> <i>Ando,</i>	<i>Iui, &amp;c.</i>	<i>I have Gone,</i> <i>&amp;c.</i>
	Anduvimos, Anduvistes, Anduviéron.	<i>Andámmo,</i> <i>Andáste,</i> <i>Andárono.</i>		
Second Perf.	He, as, a,	<i>Sono,</i> <i>Sei,</i> <i>é,</i>	<i>Iui, &amp;c.</i> <i>visuprà.</i>	<i>I have Gone,</i> <i>&amp;c. as before.</i>
	Hémos, avéys án,	<i>Sidmo,</i> <i>Sete,</i> <i>Sono,</i>		
Imper- fect.	Avia, Avias, Avia,	<i>E'ra,</i> <i>eri,</i> <i>eva,</i>	<i>Iueram,</i> <i>&amp;c.</i>	<i>I had Gone,</i> <i>&amp;c.</i>
	Avíamos, Aviades, Avian,	<i>Erauámo,</i> <i>erauáte,</i> <i>éranó.</i>		
future.	Andaré, Andarás, Andará,	<i>Anderó, andró,</i> <i>Anderái, andrai,</i> <i>Andera, andrá,</i>	<i>Ibo, &amp;c.</i>	<i>I shall or will</i> <i>goe, &amp;c.</i>
	Andarémos, Andaréys, Andarán.	<i>Anderémo, andrémo,</i> <i>Anderete, Andréte,</i> <i>Anderánno, andránno.</i>		

## Imperative mod.

A'nda tu, ánde aquel,	<i>Va tu,</i> <i>Vada, or vada colui,</i>	<i>Ito, &amp;c.</i>	<i>Go thou, &amp;c.</i>
Andémos, Andád, ánden.	<i>Andámo,</i> <i>Andáte,</i> <i>Vádmó, or vádmó.</i>		

ANDAR.

Of Verbes Irregular the first Coniugation in AR.

## Subiunctive mood.

Spanish.		Italian.		Latine.	
Pres. Como	ánde, ándes, ánde,	Quando	vada, vadi, vada, vadi, vadu, vadi,	Eam, &c.	When I do go, &c.
	andémos, andéys, ánden.		andámo, andáte, ándano, andáno.		
Imper. Como	anduviéra, andaria, anduviéste, anduvieras, andarias, anduviéstes, anduviéra, andaria, anduviéste,	Quando	andússi, andarei, andári, andússi, andarissi, andússi, andaribbi, andaría.	Eam, &c.	When I did go, &c.
	Anduviéramos, andariamos, anduviésemos, anduviérades, andariades, anduviéstedes, anduvieran, andarian, anduviéssen.		andússimo, andarémo, andússite, andarísse, andússero, andarébbero, andaríano.		
Perf. Como	áya, áyas, áya,	Quando	fiá, fiá, fiá,	Andato. &c.	When I have gone, &c.
	áyamos, aya ys, áyan,		fiámo, fiáte, fiáno,		
Pluper. Como	uviéra, o3 uviéste, uviéra, o3 uviéste, uviéra, o3 uviéste,	Quando	fússi, farei, fússi, faressi, fússi, farebbero,	Andato. &c.	When I had gone, &c.
	uviéramos, o3 uviésemos, uviérades, o3 uviéstedes, uviéran, o3 uviéssen,		fússimo, faríamos, fússite, fareísse, fússero, farebbero.		
Future. Como	anduviére, anduviéres, anduviére,	Quando	faré, farai, fará,	Andato. &c.	When I shall or will go hence &c.
	anduviéremos, anduviéredes, anduviéren.		farémo, faréte, faranno.		

## Infinitive mood, Present tense.

ANDAR,] Andare,] Ite,] to goe.

## Interperfect tense.

Avia andádo,] Effere andáto,] Iuiffe,] to have gone.

## Future tense.

Avér o3 esperar de andár, }  
 Effere per andare, } Iterum esse, } to goe, o3 about to goe.  
 Deuer andare, }  
 Haver ad andare.

## Gerund.

Andádo,] Andando,] Eundo,] in going.

## Participle of the Present tense and Passive voice.

El que anda,] Andante,] Euns,] one going.

## Participle of the Perfect and Passive voice.

Andádo,] Andato,] gone.

of



Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as Traer, Saber, Tener, Poder, Querer, Ponér, Hazér, Cabér.

TRAER.

## Indicative mood.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	yo TRAIGO,	io APPORTO,	Adduco, &c.	{ I fetch or bring, &c.
	tu tráes,	tu apporti,		
Pres.	aquel tráe,	colui apporta,		{
	tráemos,	apporiamo,		
Pres.	tráes,	apporlate,		{
	tráen.	apporiano.		
Imper.	Tráya,	apporiamo,	Adducebam	{ I did fetch or bring, &c.
	tráyas,	apporiam,	&c.	
Imper.	tráya,	apporiana,		{
	tráyanos,	apporiammo,		
Imper.	tráades,	apporiamate,		{
	tráan,	apporiamano.		
First Pres.	trúxe, or tráxe,	apporái,	Adduxi, &c.	{ I have fetcht or brought, &c.
	truxiste, or traxiste,	apporáste,		
First Pres.	trúxo, or tráxo,	apporío,		{
	truximos, or traximos,	apporiammo,		
First Pres.	truxistes, or traxistes,	apporíste,		{
	truxéron, or traxéron,	apporíron, apporíro, apporíar.		
Second perfect.	hé,	ho,	Adduxi, &c.	{ I have fetcht or brought, &c.
	as, &c.	hai,		
Plu- perf.	avia,	hauéua,	Adduxeram, &c.	{ I had fetcht or brought, &c.
	avias, &c.	hauéui,		
Futur.	traeré,	apporará,	Adducam,	{ I shall or will fetch or bring, &c.
	traerás,	apporarai,	&c.	
Futur.	traerá,	apporará,		{
	traerémos,	apporarémo,		
Futur.	traeréys,	apporaréte,		{
	traerán,	apporaránmo.		

## Imperative mood.

Impe- rative mood.	Tráe tu,	Apporta tu,	Adduc, ad-	{ Bring or fetch thou, &c.
	tráyga aquel	apporiti colui,	ducito,	
Impe- rative mood.	tráemos,	apporiamo,		{
	tracd,	apporlate,		
Impe- rative mood.	tráyan,	apporiano,		{

of

**TRAER** *Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as TRAER, in Italian Apportare, Arrecare, Trahere, Adducere, Menare, in Latine Adducere, Afferre, Trahere, to fetch, to bring, to carry to draw.*

**Subiunctive mood.**

Spanish.		Italian.		Latine.	
Pres.	Como	Trayga o Traygas, &c.	Quando	Apporti, Apporti, Apporti,	Cum
	Traygan.	Traygan.	Apportissimo, Apportiate, Apportino.	Adducam, &c.	When I doe fetch, or bring, &c.
Imperf.	Como	Truxera, Traeria, Truxesse, Truxeras, Traerias, Truxesses, Truxera, Traeria, Truxesse.	Quando	Apportassi o Apportassi, Apportassi o Apportassi, Apportassero o Apportassero.	Cum
	Truxeramos, Traeramos, Truxessemos, Truxerades, Traerades, Truxessedes, Truxeran, Traerian, Truxessen.	Truxeramos, Traeramos, Truxessemos, Truxerades, Traerades, Truxessedes, Truxeran, Traerian, Truxessen.	Apportarissimo o Apportarissimo, Apportarissimo o Apportarissimo, Apportarissimo o Apportarissimo.	Adduxerem, &c.	When I did fetch or bring, &c.
perfect.	Como	Traydo.	Quando	Habbia, Habbia, Habbia,	Cum
	Traydo.	Traydo.	Habbiamo, Habbiate, Habbiano,	Adduxerim, &c.	When I haue fetched or brought, &c.
Pluperf.	Como	Traydo.	Quando	Hauerei o Hauessi, Haueressi o Hauessi, Haueressi o Hauessi,	Cum
	Traydo.	Traydo.	Hauerissimo o Hauessimo, Hauerissimo o Hauessimo, Hauerissimo o Hauessimo.	Adduxissem, &c.	When I had brought or fetched, &c.
Future.	Como	Truxere, Truxeres, Truxere.	Quando	Hauero, Hauerai, Hauerai,	Cum
	Truxeremos, Truxerades, Truxeren.	Truxeremos, Truxerades, Truxeren.	Haueremo, Hauerete, Haueranno	Adduxero, &c.	When I shall bring or fetch, &c.

**Infinitive mood Present tense.**

**TRAER** *Apportare* *Adducere*, ] *to bring, to fetch.*

**Pluperfect tense.**

*Aver Traydo*, ] *Hauer Apportato*, ] *Adduxisse*, ] *to haue brought.*

**Future tense.**

*Aver o Esperar de traer*, } *Douer Apportare,* } *Adducendum esse*, ] *to bring hereafter.*  
*Essere per Apportare.*

**Gerund.**

*Trayendo*, ] *Apportando*, ] *Adducendo*, ] *in bringing or fetching.*

**Participle of the Latine and Present tense.**

*El que trae* ] *Apportante*, ] *Adducens*, ] *one bringing.*

**Participle of the Latine and Pluper tense.**

*Traydo* ] *Apportato*, ] *Adductus*, ] *brought.*

**Participle of the Future tense.**

*el que ha o espera* } *Douendo Apportare,* } *Adducturus* } *About to bring*  
*de traer,* } *Essendo per Apportare,* } *rus,* } *or fetch.*

These



## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

45

These Verbes following ending in cer, make their Present tense of the Indicative by adding an *s* before *c*, thus,

Infinitives.	Pres.	Preter.
Acaecer, to happen,	yo acaésco,	Acaecy.
Acontecer, <i>idem</i> ,	yo aconteasco,	Acontesci.
Adolescer, to be soze or sicke,	yo adolesco,	Adolesci.
Agradecer, to give thanks,	yo agradesco,	Agradecy.
Amortecer, to swonne,	yo amortesco,	Amorteci.
Desfallecer, <i>idem</i> ,	yo desfalleasco,	Desfallecy.
Apetecer, to desire,	yo apetesco,	Apetecy.
Crecer, to grow,	yo creasco,	Creci.
Encallecer, to wax hard as browne,	yo encalleasco,	Encalleci.
Encarecer, to augment	yo encareasco,	Encareci.
Empecer, to hinder,	yo empesco,	Empeci.
Establecer, to establish,	yo estableasco,	Estableci.
Fenecer, to finish,	yo fenesco,	Feneci.
Pacer, to feed.	yo pascio,	Paci.
Perecer, to perish,	yo peresco,	Perecy.

Except.

Vencer, to overcome,

yo vengo,

Venci.

In all other Words and Tenses they are declined like the Verbes Regular of the second Coniugation in ER

These in ger, make their Present of the Indicative, by changing *g* into *j*, which the Spaniards in writing doe much vse, setting downe the one for the other, as well in Nounes as in Verbes, as in Nounes Magestad, Majestad; Mensaje, Mensaje, and the like.

Infinitives.	Pres.	Preter.
Encoger, to withdraw,	yo encójo,	Encogi.
Recoger, to gather up or retire	yo recójo,	Recogi.
Acoger, to entertaine,	yo acójo,	Acogy.
Escoger, to chuse out,	yo escójo,	Escogy.
Coger, to gather,	yo cójo,	Cogy.
Vngir, to annoint,	yo únjo,	Vngi.

In other Words and Tenses like the Regulars.

These make their Present tense of the Indicative, by adding *i* in the last syllable saue one of the Infinitive, as

Infinitives.	Pres.	Preter.
Defender, to defend,	yo defiéndio,	Defendi.
Dehender, to cleave asunder.	yo dehiéndio,	Dehendi.

And these make the Present tense by turning *o* in the last syllable saue one of the Infinitive into *ue*, as

Infinitives.	Pres.	Preter.
Bolvér, to turne,	yo buélvo,	Bolvi.
Rebolvér, to returne,	yo rebuélvo,	Rebolvi.
Solér, to be soone,	yo suélo,	Soli.
Cosér, to sow,	yo cuéso,	Cosy.
Cozer, to seethe,	yo cuézo,	Cozi.
Dolér, to be soze, to griene,	yo duélo,	Doli.

And these following thus,

Caér, to fall,	yo caygo,	Cay.
Roér, to gnaw,	yo róygo,	Roy.
Valér, to be worth,	yo váigo,	Vali.
Traér, to fetch or bring,	yo tráigo,	Trúxe.
Oír, to heare,	yo óygo,	Oy.

In other Words and Tenses like the Regular Verbes.

In like manner thow all Words and Tenses are his Compounde declined, as Retraér, to withdraw, yo Retráigo, I doe withdraw, Retruéxe, I haue withdrawne, &c.

SABER,

*Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as SABER,*  
*in Italian Sapere, Latine Scire, Sapere, to know.*

## Indicative mod.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	{ yo SE', tu SÁbes, aquel Sábe.	{ Io So, tu Sai, colui Sa.	{ Scio, Scis, &c.	{ I know, thou know'st, &c.
	{ Sabémos, Sabéys, Sáben.	{ Sappiamo, Sapete, Sanno.		
Imper- fect.	{ Sabia, Sabias, Sabia.	{ Sapéua, Sapéui, Sapéua.	{ Sciebam, &c.	{ I did know, &c.
	{ Sabíamos, Sabíades, Sabían.	{ Sapéuámo, Sapéuáde, Sapéuáno.		
First Perfect.	{ Súpe, Supiste, Supo.	{ Séppi, Sappiste, Seppo.	{ Scivi, &c.	{ I have known, &c.
	{ Supimos, Supistes, Supieron.	{ Sappémmo, Sappéste, Seppero.		
Second Perfect.	{ He as a Hémos avéys án	{ Ho Hai Ha Habbiamo Havéte, Hánno	{ Scivi, &c. vi ante.	{ I have known, &c. as above.
	{ Avia Avias Avia	{ Havéua Havéui Havéua	{ Saputo.	
Pluper- fect.	{ Avíamos Aviades Avían	{ Havéuámo Havéuáde Havéuáno	{ Sciveram, &c.	{ I had known, &c.
			{ Saputo.	
Future.	{ Sabré, Sabrás, Sabrá.	{ Sappré, Sapprás, Sapprá.	{ Sciam, &c.	{ I shall or will know, &c.
	{ Sabrémos, Sabréys, Sabrán.	{ Sapprémmo, Sappréte, Sapprámo.		

## Imperative mod.

{ Sábe tu, Sepa aquel.	{ Sappi tu, Sappia colui.	{ Sci, Scito, &c.	{ Know thou, &c.
{ Sepámos, Sabéd, Sépan.	{ Sappiamo, Sappiate, Sappiano.		

Declining



## Declining of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as SABER. SABER.

## Subiunctive mode.

Spanish.		Italian.		Latine.	
Pres. Como	{ SEPA, Sépas, Sépa, Sepámos, Sepáys, Sepán.	Quando	{ SAPPIA, Sappi, Sappia, Sappiamo, Sappiate, Sappiano.	Cum	{ Sciam, &c. When I doe know, &c.
Imperf. Como	{ Supiera, sabría, supiéſſe, Supieras, sabrias, supiéſſes, Supiera, sabría, supiéſſe, Supiéramos, sabríamos, supiéſſemos, Supiérades, sabriades, supiéſſedes, Supiéran, sabrían, supiéſſen.	Quando	{ Saprei, ſapeſſi, Sapreſti, ſapeſſi, Saprebbe, ſapeſſe, Sapreſſimo, ſapeſſimo, Sapreſſe, ſapeſſe, Saprebbero, ſapeſſero,	Cum	{ Scirem, &c. When I did know, &c.
Perfett. Como	{ A'ya, áyas, áya, Ayámos, Ayáys, áyan,	Sabido.	{ Hábbia, Hábbi, Hábbia, Hábbiamo, Hábbiate, Hábbiano,	Saputo.	{ Scierim, &c. When I haue knowne, &c.
Pluper. Como	{ Uviéra, oꝝ uviéſſe, uviéras, oꝝ uviéſſes, uviéra, oꝝ uviéſſe, uviéramos, oꝝ uviéſſemos, uviérades, oꝝ uviéſſedes, uviéran, oꝝ uviéſſen,	Sabido.	{ Hauerei, hauéſſi, Hauereſti, hauéſſi, Hauerebbe, hauéſſe, Hauereſſimo, hauéſſimo, Hauereſſe, hauéſſe, Hauerebbono, hauéſſero,	Saputo.	{ Sciuſſim, &c. When I had knowne, &c.
First Future. Como	{ Supiere, Supieres, Supiere, Supiéremos, Supiéredes, Supiéren.	Quando	{ Hauero, Hauerai, Hauerá, Haueremo, Hauerete, Haueranno,	Saputo.	{ Sciuero, &c. When I ſhal know, &c.
Second Future. Como	{ Uviére, oꝝ avré, uviéres, oꝝ avrás, uviére, oꝝ avrá, uviéremos, oꝝ avrémos, uviéredes, oꝝ avréys, uviéren, oꝝ aurán,	Sabido.	{ Hauero, Hauerai, Hauerá, Haueremo, Hauerete, Haueranno,	Saputo.	{ Sciuero, &c. When I ſhal know, &c.

## Infinitive mod Preſent tenſe.

SABER, ]	Sapere, ]	Scire, ]	to know.
Interperfect tenſe.			
avér Sabido, ]	hauer Saputo, ]	Sciuſſe, ]	to haue knowne.
Future tenſe.			
avér oꝝ el- perar de Sabér, }	Doner ſapere, Hauer a ſapere, Eſſere per ſapere, }	Sciturnum eſſe, ]	to know hereafter.

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Sabiendo, ] el que Sábe, ] Sabido, ]	Gerund.		
	Sapendo, ]	Sciendo, ]	in knowing.
	Participle of the Present, and Future.		
	quello chi Sa, ]	Sciens, ]	one knowing.
	Participle of the Preter tense and Pastime.		
	Saputo, ]		knowne.

TENER Declining of Verbs Irregular of the second Conjugation in ER, as TENER, In Italian, and Latine, Tenere, to Hold.

## Indicative mode.

Present.	YO TENGO, tu Tiénes, aquél Tiéne,	IO TENGO, tu Tiéni, colui Tiéne,	Tenes, &c.	I doe hold, &c.
	Tenémós, Tenéys, Tiénen.			
Imper- fect.	Tenía, Tenias, Tenía,	Tenéua, & tenía, Tenéui, Tenéua, & tenía,	Tenebam, &c.	I did hold, &c.
	Teníamos, Teniades, Tenían.	Tenenúamo, Tenenúate, Tenenúaho.		
First Perfect.	Túve, Tuviste, Túvo,	Tenni, Tenisti, Ténne,	Tenni, &c.	I have held, &c.
	Tuvimos, Tuvistes, Tuvieron.	Tennimmo, Tenniste, Ténnero.		
Second Perfect.	Yo He, Tu as, aquél á,	Ho, Hai, Ho,	Tenni, &c.	I have held, &c. as next above.
	Hémos, avéys, án,	Habbiamo, Havete, Hanno.	Tenúta.	
Pluper- fect.	Avía, Avias, Avía,	Hauéua, Hauéui, Hauéua,	Teneram, &c.	I had held, &c.
	Avíamos, Aviades, Avían.	Hauenúamo, Hauenúate, Hauenúaho.	Tenúta.	
Future.	Tendré, & Terné, Tendrás, & Ternás, Tendrá, & Terná,	Teneré, & Terré, Tenerái, & Terrái, Tenerá, & Terra,	Tenébo, &c.	I shal or will hold, &c.
	Tendrémos, & Ternémos, Tendréys, & Ternéys, Tendrán, & ternán,	Tenerémo, & Terrémo, Teneréte, & Terréte, Teneránmo, & Terránmo,		
Imperative				



## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

49

## Imperative mode.

Ten tu,  
Tenga aquél,  
Tengámos,  
Tened,  
Tengan.

Tieni tu,  
Tenga colui,  
Teniamo,  
Teneite,  
Tengano.

Tene tu, &c. Hold thou,  
&c.

## Subjunctive mode.

Spanish.		Italian.		Latine.	
Pres. Como	Tenga, Tengas, Tenga,	Quando	Tenga, Tenghi, Tenga,	Cum	Teneam, &c. When I doe hold, &c.
	Tengámos, Tengáys, Tengan.		Teniamo, Teniate, Tengano.		
Imperf. Como	Tuviéra, ternia, tuviéssé, Tuvieras, ternias, tuviésses, Tuviéra, ternia, tuviéssé,	Quando	Tenésse, teneréi, teneria, Teneisse, tenerissi, Tenésse, tenerebbe, teneria,	Cum	Tenerem, &c. When I did hold, &c.
	Tuviéramos, terníamos, tuviéssemos, Tuvierades, terniades, tuviéssedes, Tuvieran, ternian, tuviéssen.		Tenésimo, tenerimmo, Teneisse, tenerisse, Tenéssero, tenerebbono,		
Perfect. Como	A'ya, Ayas, aya,	Quando	Habbia, Habbi, Habbia,	Cum	Tenuerim, &c. When I have holden, &c.
	Ayámos, Ayáys, ayan,		Habbiamo, Habbiate, Habbiano,		
Pluper. Como	uviéra, o'z uviéssé, uviéras, o'z uviésses, uviéra, o'z uviéssé,	Quando	Hauerei, o'z Hauéssi, Hauereissi, o'z Hauéssi, Hauerebbe, o'z Hauéssé,	Cum	Tenuissim, &c. When I had holden, &c.
	uviéramos, o'z uviéssemos, uviérades, o'z uviéssedes, uviéran, o'z uviéssen,		Hauerémmo, o'z Hauéssimo, Hauereisse, o'z Hauéssé, Hauerébbono, o'z Hauésséro,		
First Future. Como	Tuviére, Tuvieres, Tuviére,			Cum	Tenuero, &c. When I shal o'z will hold, &c.
	Tuviéremos, Tuvieredes, Tuvieren.				
Second Future. Como	uviére, o'z avré, uviéres, o'z avrás, uviére, o'z avrá,	Quando	Haueró, Hauerai, Hauerá,	Cum	Tenuero, &c. When I shal o'z will hold, &c. as next above.
	uviéremos, o'z avrémos, uviéredes, o'z avréys, uviéren, o'z avrán,		Hauerémo, Hauerete, Haueranno,		

## Infinitive mod Present tense.

TENER, ] Tenere, ] Tenere, ] to hold.

## Imperfect tense.

avér Tenido, ] Hauér Tenido, ] Tenuisse, ] to have holden.

Q 9 3

Future

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

## Future tense.

Avér de Tenér, { Douér tenère,  
 { Haver a tenir,  
 { Effere per tenère, } *Tenturum esse,* to hold hereafter.

## Gerund.

Teniendo, ] Tenendo, ] Tenendo, ] In holding.

## Participle of the Present and Active.

El que tiene, ] Teniente ] Tenens, ] one holding.

## Participle of the Passive and Passive.

Tenido, ] Tenuto, ] Tentus, ] holden.

Like this verbe simple are his Compounds in all points declined ~~showing~~ all Words and Tenses, as Manténér, to maintaine, yo Manténgo, Mantúve. Detenér, to detaine or stay, yo Deténgo, Detúve. Retenér, to withhold or retaine, yo Reténgo, Retúve. Sosténér, to sustaine or uphold, yo Sosténgo, Sustúve.

## PODER

the second Coniugation of Verbes Irregular in ER, as PODER,  
 in Italian Potere, in Latine Poss, to be able.)

## Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Present.	yo PUEDO,	POS SO,	Possu, &c.	I can or am able, &c.
	tu Puedes,	Puo,		
	aquel Puede,			
	Podémos,	Possámo,		
	Podéys,	Poteis,		
	Puedén.	Possano & Púno.		
Imperfect.	Podía,	Potéua, or Potéa,	Poteram, &c.	I was able, &c.
	Podías,	Potéui,		
	Podía,	Potéua, or Potéa,		
	Podíamos,	Potéuámo,		
	Podíades,	Potéuáde,		
	Podían.	Potéuáno.		
First Perfect.	Pude,	Potei,	Potui, &c.	I could or have bene able, &c.
	Pudiste,	Poteisti,		
	Púdo,	Poteí,		
	Pudimos,	Potémus,		
	Pudistes,	Poteístis,		
	Pudieron.	Poteram & Pótero.		
Second Perfect.	He as a	Ho Hai Ha	Potui, &c. vi supra.	I could or have bene able, &c. as next above.
	Hémos avéys an	Habbiámo Hanéte Hanno	Potúta.	
Imperfect.	Avía Avías Avía	Hauéua Hauéua Hauéua	Potueram, &c.	I had bene able, &c.
	Avíamos Aviades Avían	Hauéuámo Hauéuáde Hauéuáno	Potúta.	
Future.	Podré, Podrás, Podrá,	Potré, Potrai, Potrá,	Potero, &c.	I shal or will be able, &c.
	Podrémos, Podréys, Podrán,	Potrémos, Potréis, Potrán,		

Imperative mood wanted as in the Latine.



## Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as PODER.

## PODER

## Subiunctive mode.

Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
Pres. Como	Pueda, puedas, pueda,	Quando	Possa, possis, possa,	Cum Possim, &c.	When I can or be able, &c.
	pu-dámos, podáys, pu-dan,		possiámo; & potiámo, possite, & potiate, posiano.		
Imper- fect. Como	Pudiéra, podría, pudiéffe, pudiéras, podrías, pudiéffes, pudiéra, podría, pudiéffe,	Quando	potéssi, potréci, potría, potéssi, potrésti, potéssi, potrébbe, potría,	Cum Potéssim, &c.	When I could or might be able, &c.
	pu-diéramos, podríamos, pudiéssimos, pu-diérades, podríades, pudiéssedes, pu-diéran, podrían, pudiéssen.		potéssimo, potrémmo, potéste, potréste, potéssero, potrébbimo, potríamo,		
Past. Como	áya, áyas, áya,	Quando	habbia, habbi, habbia,	Cum Potuerim, &c.	When I have been able, &c.
	áyamos, ayáys, áyan,		habbiámo, habbiate, habbiámo,		
Plus- perfect. Como	uviéra, or uviéffe, uviéra, or uviéffes, uviéra, or uviéffe,	Quando	hauessi, hauerti, hauessi, hauerti, hauessi, hauerebbe,	Cum Potuissim, &c.	When I had been able, &c.
	uviéramos, or uviéssimos, uviérades, or uviéssedes, uviéran, or uviéssen,		hauéssimo, hauerémo, hauéste, haueréste, hauéssero, hauerebbimo,		
First Futur. Como	Pudiére, pudiéres, pudiére,	Quando		Cum Potuero, &c.	When I shal be a- ble here- after, &c.
	pu-diéremos, pu-diéredes, pu-diéren.				
second Futur. Como	uviére, or avré uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá,	Quando	hauero, hauerai, hauera,	Cum Potuero, &c. ut ante.	When I shal or will be a- ble here- after, &c. as next about.
	uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán.		hauerémo, hauerete, haueranno,		

## Infinitive mood Present tense.

Podér, ] Potére, ] Possé, ] To be able.

## Interperfect tense.

Avér podído, ] Hauér potuto, ] Potuissé, ] To have been able.

## Gerund.

Pudiéndo, ] Poténdo, ] In being able.

## Participle.

Podido, ] Potúto, ] Able.

of

**Querér.** *Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as QVERER, in Italian, Volere, ] in Latine Velle, ] To will, to loue, or to be willing.*

**Indicative mod.**

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
<b>Pres.</b>	yo QVIERO, tu Quieres, aquél Quiere, Plu. querénos, queréys, quíeren.	io VOGLIO, tu vuoi, colui vuole, Plu. vogliamo, volete, vogliono.	Volo, Vult, &c.	I will, or loue, &c.
<b>Imper- fect.</b>	queria, querias, queria, queríamos, queriades, querían.	volera, volera, volera, voleríamos, volerate, voleriano.	Volebam, &c.	I did will, or I did loue, &c.
<b>First Perfect.</b>	quise, quisiste, quiso, quisimos, quisistes, quisieron.	volli, & volsi, volesti, volle, & volse.	Volui, &c.	I have will- ed, or I have loued, &c.
<b>Second Perfect.</b>	He, as, a, hénos, or avénos, avéys, an,	He, Hai, Ha, Habbiamo, Hauete, Hanno,	Volui, &c. ut autē. Volūto	I have will- ed, or I have loued, &c. as next above.
<b>Pluper- fect.</b>	Avia, Avias, Avia, Avíamos, Aviades, Avían,	Hauēna, Hauēni, Hauēna, Hauēnāmo, Hauēnāte, Hauēnāno,	Volueram, &c. Volūto	I had will- ed, or I had loued, &c.
<b>Future.</b>	querré, querrás, querrá, querrémos, querréys, querrán.	vorré, vorrái, vorrá, vorrémo, vorréte, vorrāno.	Volan, &c.	I will, or shall will or loue, &c.

**Imperative mod.**

Impe- rative mod.	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine	Will thou, or loue thou, &c.
	quere tu, quera aquél, querámos, querré, querrán.	vai tu, voglia colui, vogliāmo, vogliate, vogliāno.	Latine Wanteth the Im- perative mod.	

of

# Declining of Verbes Irregular.

53

Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as QVERER.

Querér.

Subiunctive mode.

Spanish.		Italian.		Latine.	
Pres. Como	Quera, or Querra, &c.	Quando	Voglia, Vogli, Voglia,	Velim, &c.	When I will or loue, &c.
	Querámos, Queráys, Querán.		Vogliamo, Vogliate, Vogliano.	Cum	
Imperf. Como	Quisiera, querría, quisiesse, Quisieras, querrías, quisiesles, Quisiera, querría, quisiesse,	Quando	Voleffi, vorrei, & vorria, Voleffi, vorrei, Voleffe, vorrebbe, vorria,	Vellem, &c.	When I would or did loue, &c.
	Quisieramos, querriamos, quisiessemos, Quisierades, querriades, quisiesledes, Quisieran, querrian, quisieslen.		Voleffimo, vorremmo, Voleste, vorreste, Voleffero, vorrebbero, &c.	Cum	
Perfect. Como	A'ya, áyas, áya,	Querido.	Habbia Habbi Habbia	Voluerim, &c.	When I haue wil- led or lo- ued, &c.
	Ayámos, Ayáys, áyan,		Habbiamo Habbiate Habbiano	Cum	
Pluper. Como	Uviéra or uviésse, uviéras or uviésles, uviéra or uviésse,	Querido.	Quando Hauessi, or hauerei, Hauessi, or hauereffi, Hauesse, or hauerebbe,	Vola- iffim, &c.	When I had willed or lo- ued, &c.
	uviéramos or uviéssemos, uviérades or uviésledes, uviéran or uviéslen,		Hauessimo, or hauercimo, Haueste, or hauereste, Hauessero, or hauerebbono,	Cum	
First Future. Como	Quisiere, Quisiéres, Quisiere,	Quando	Hauero, Hauerai, Hauerá,	Volueró, &c.	When I shall will or loue, &c.
	Quisiéremos, Quisiéredes, Quisiéren.		Hauercimo, Hauerete, Haueranno,	Cum	
Second Future. Como	Uviere, or avré, uviéres, or avrás, uviere, or avrá,	Querido.	Hauero, Hauerai, Hauerá,	Volueró, &c.	When I shall be willing or loue, &c.
	uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán,		Hauercimo, Hauerete, Haueranno,	Cum	

Infinitive mood Present tense.

Querér, ] Volere, ] Velle, ] to will or loue.

Pterperfect tense.

avér Querido, ] auer Voluto, ] Voluisse, ] to haue loued or bene willing.

Gerund.

Queriendo, ] Volendo, ] Volendo ] In being willing or louing.

Participle.

Querido, ] Voluto, ] loued, willed.

Add to this Verbe this particle Mas, and so decline it thozow all moods and tenses, and it makes the signification to be in Latine *Malo*, in English I had leifer, I would rather, as yo Quiero mas, in Latine *Malo*, I would leifer, or loue moze: tu queres mas, *Mamus*, thou hadst rather or louest moze. Pterimperfect tense, yo Quería mas, I would rather or loued moze. Pterperfect, Quie mas, &c.



**PONER** of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as **PONER**, in Italian *Ponere, Porre, Mettere*, in Latine, *Ponere, Locare*, to put, to place.

## Indicative mood.

	Spanish.		Italian.		Latine.	
Pres.	YO PONGO, tu Pones, aquel Pone,	Plu.	IO PONGO, tu Poni, colui Pone,	Plu.	Pono, &c.	I do put, &c.
	Ponemos, Poneys, Ponen.		Ponimo, Ponete, Pongono,			
Imper- fect.	Ponia, Ponias, Ponia,		Poncia, Ponciai, Poncia.		Ponebam, &c.	I did put, &c.
	Poniamos, Poniades, Ponian.		Ponciamo, Ponciate, Ponciano.			
First Perfect.	Puse, Pusiste, Puso,		Posi, Ponesti, Pose.		Posui, &c.	I have put, &c.
	Pusimos, Pusistes, Pusieron.		Ponciamo, Poneste, Posero.			
Second Perfect.	He, as, a,	Puesto.	Ho, Hai, Ha,	Posto.	Posui, &c.	I have put, &c.
	Avemos, y hemos, avéys, an,		Habbiamo, Hancite, Hanno,			
Pluper- fect.	Avia, Avias, Avia,	Puesto.	Hamea, Hameai, Hamea,	Posto.	Posueram, &c.	I had put, &c.
	Aviamos, Aviades, Avian,		Hameiamo, Hameate, Hameano,			
Future.	Pone, o Pondré, Ponás, o Pondrás, Poná, o Pondrá,		Poneré, & Porro, Ponerai, & Porrai, Ponerá, & Porrá,		Ponam, &c.	I shal or wil put, &c.
	Ponemos, o Pondrémos, Poneys, o Pondréys, Ponán, o Pondrán.		Ponerémo, & Porrémo, Ponerete, & Porréte, Poneránmo, & Poránmo.			

## Imperative mood.

Pón tu, Ponga aquel,	Pone tu, Ponga colui,	Pone, Ponete, Ponat, Ponete, to, &c.	Put thou, put he, or let him put, &c.
Pongámos, Poned, Pongan.	Poniamo, Ponete, Pongano.		

Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as PONER.

PONER

Subiunctive mode.

Spanish.		Italian.		Latin.	
<b>Pres.</b>	Ponga, Póngas, Ponga.	<b>Quando</b> Ponga, Ponghi, Ponga,		<b>Cum</b>	Ponam, &c. When I doe put, &c.
<b>Como</b>	Pongámos, Pongáys, Pongan.	Poniamo, Poniate, Pongano.			
<b>Imperf.</b>	Pusiéra, poniá or pondría, pusiése, Pusiéras, poniás or pondrias, pusiésses, Pusiéra, poniá or pondría, pusiése.	<b>Quando</b> Ponessi, Ponerei, Ponessi, Ponessi, Ponessi, Ponerebbe,		<b>Cum</b>	Ponerem, &c. When I did put, &c.
<b>Como</b>	Pusiéramos, poniáramos or pondriáramos, pusiéssémos, Pusiérades, poniádes or pondriádes, pusiéssédes, Pusiéran, ponián or pondrían, pusiéssén.	Ponéssimo, Ponereímo, Ponessi, Ponessi, Ponessi, Ponerebbono.			
<b>Perfect.</b>	áya áyas áya	<b>Quando</b> Habbi Habbi Habbi		<b>Cum</b>	Posuerim, &c. When I have put, &c.
<b>Como</b>	ayámos ayáys ayan	Habbiámo Habbiate Habbianno			
<b>Pluper.</b>	uviéra or uviése uviéras or uviésses uviéra or uviése	<b>Quando</b> Haueri or Haueressi Haueressi or Haueressi Hauer ebbe or Haueressi		<b>Cum</b>	Posuissim, &c. When I had put, &c.
<b>Como</b>	uviéramos or uviéssémos uviéredes or uviéssédes uviéran or uviéssén	Hauerémmo or Haueréssimo Haueressi or Haueressi Hauerébbono or Haueréssero,			
<b>First Future.</b>	Pusiére, Pusiéres, Pusiére.			<b>Cum</b>	Posuero, &c. When I shall or will put, &c.
<b>Como</b>	Pusiéremos, Pusiéredes, Pusiéren.				
<b>Second Future.</b>	Uviére or avré uviéres or avrás uviére or avrá	<b>Quando</b> Haueró Hauerá Hauerá		<b>Cum</b>	Posuero, &c. When I shall or will put, &c.
<b>Como</b>	uviéremos or avrémos uviéredes or avréys uviéren or avrán,	Hauerémo Hauerete Haueranno			

Infinitive mood Present tense.

PONER, ] Ponere, Mettere, Pore, ] Ponere, ] to Put.

Pluperfect tense.

Avér Puésto, ] Hauer Posto, ] Posuisse, ] to have Put.

Gerund.

Poniendo, ] Ponendo, ] Ponendo ] in Putting.

Participle.

Puésto, ] Posso, ] Positus, ] Put.

After this manner are declined in all points Componér, to compose, yo Compongo, I doe compose, yo Compule, I have composed, &c. Also Disponér, to dispose, yo Dispongo, I dispose, Dispuise, I have disposed. And Anteponer, to put before, yo Antepongo, I doe put before, Antepúse, I have put before. So Proponér, to set out, to alledge, yo Propongo, Propúse.

HAZER

*Of Verbes Irregular the second Conjugation in ER, as HAZER, in Italian Fare, in Latine Facere, to doe, to make.*

## Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.
Pres.	yo HA'G O, tu Házas, aquel Házé.	Io F O, tu Fai, colui Fa.	Facio, &c. I doe make or doe, &c.
	Hazémos, Hazéis, Hazeu.	Facciamo, Fate, Fanno.	
Imper- fect.	Házia, Házias, Házia.	Faccia, Facci, Faccia.	Faciebam, &c. I did make or doe, &c.
	Hazíamos, Hazíades, Hazían.	Facciavamo, Facciavate, Facciavano.	
First Perfect.	Hize. Hiziste, Hizo.	Feci, Fecisti, Fecit.	Feci, &c. I have made or done, &c.
	Hizimos, Hizistes, Hizieron.	Fecimmo, Fecistis, Fecerunt.	
Second Perfect.	He as a	Ho Hai Ha	Feci, &c. vi ante. I have made or done, &c.
	Hémos avéys an	Hecho. Habbiamo Havete Hanno	Falto.
Imper- fect.	Avia Avías Avia	Havéua Havéui Havéua	Feceram, &c. I had made or done, &c.
	Avíamos Aviades Avían	Havéuamo Havéuaste Havéuano	Falto.
Future.	Haré, Harás, Hará.	Faré, Farai, Fará.	Feciam, &c. I shal or will make or doe, &c.
	Harémos, Haréys, Harán.	Faremos, Farete, Faranno.	

## Imperative mode.

Ház tu, Hága aquel.	Fa tu, Faccia colui.	Fa, Facis, &c.	Doe thou, or make thou, &c.
Hagámos, Házéd, Hágan.	Facciamo, Fate, Facciano.		

of



Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as HAZER.

HAZER

Subiunctive mode.

Spanish.		Italian.	Latin.	
Pres. Como	Hago, hagas, haga,	Facia, facis, faciat,	Faciam, Facies,	When I doe make or doe, &c.
	hagamos, hagays, hagan.	Quando faciamos, faciatis, faciant.	Cum	

Imper. Como	hiziera, haria, hiziesse, hizieras, harias, hiziesles, hiziera, haria, hiziesse,	facess, facer, facis, facess, facess, facess, facess, facis,	Faciam, Facies,	When I did doe or make, &c.
	hizieramos, hariamos, hiziessemos, hizierades, hariaades, hiziesledes, hizieran, harian, hizieslen.	Quando facessimo, facessimo, facessis, facessis, facessis, facessis, facessis,	Cum	

Perfect. Como	aya, ayas, aya,	habbia, habbi, habbia,	Faciam, Facies,	When I have made or done, &c.
	ayamos, ayays, ayan,	Quando habbiamo, habbiatis, habbiano.	Fatto Cum	

Pluper. Como	uviéra, or uviésse, uviéras, or uviésles, uviéra, or uviésse,	hauerei, or haueressi, haueressi, or haueressi, haueressi, or haueressi,	Faciam, Facies,	When I had made or done, &c.
	uviéramos, or uviéssemos, uviérades, or uviésledes, uviéran, or uviéslen,	Quando hauerémmo, or haueréssimo, haueréssis, or haueréssis, haueréssis, or haueréssis,	Fatto Cum	

First future. Como	hiziére, hizieres, hiziére,		Faciam, Facies,	When I shall or will make or doe, &c.
	hizieremos, hizieredes, hizierén.		Cum	

Second Futur. Como	Uviére or avré, uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá,	Haueré, Hauerai, Hauerá,	Faciam, Facies, Faciam,	When I shall or will make or doe, &c.
	uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredes, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán,	Quando Hauerémo, Hauerete, Haueranno,	Cum	

Infinitive mode Present tense.

Hazer,] Fare,] Facere, To doe, to make.

Preterperfect tense.

Aver hecho,] Hauer fatto] Feissé,] To have made or done, &amp;c.

Future tense.

Aver or esperar de hazer, { Douer fare, } Faciendum est } To make or do hereafter.  
 { Esser per fare, } vel fare,  
 { Hauer a fare. }

Gerund.

Haziendo] Facendo,] Faciendo,] In doing or making, &amp;c.

R

Supine

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

*Supine of the Active voice.*  
 A Hazér,] *Di fare,*] *Factum,*] *To make or do.*  
*Supine of the Passive voice.*  
 De sér hécho,] *D'esser fatto,*] *Fattu,*] *To be made or done.*  
*Participle of the Active and Present tense.*  
 El que háze,] *Fuente,*] *Faciens,*] *One doing or making.*  
*Participle of the Passive and Preter tense.*  
 Hécho] *Fatto,*] *Factus,*] *Made or done, &c.*  
*Participle of the Future tense.*  
 El que ha, or Espéra de hazér,] *Havendo a fare,*] *Faciurus,*] *About to do, &c.*  
*Essendo per fare,*

## CABER.

*Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as CABER,*  
*in Italian Capere,] Latine Continere & Contineri,]*  
*To containe, or to be contained.*

## Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	Yo QUEPO,	Io CAPISCO,	Ego contineo,	I containe,
	tu cábes.	tu capisci,	tu continer, &c.	Thou containest, &c.
Imper- fect.	aquél cábe,	colui capisce,	Ego continer,	Thou art con- tained, &c.
	cabémos,	capiamo,	tu contineris, &c.	
Imper- fect.	cabéys,	capite,		
	cáben.	capiscano,		
First Perf.	cabía,	capias,	continēbam, &c.	I did containe,
	cabías,	capias,	continēbar, &c.	I was contain- ed, &c.
First Perf.	cabía,	capias,		
	cabíamos,	capiamus,		
First Perf.	cabíades,	capistis,		
	cabían.	capissent,		
First Perf.	cúpe,	cupi, or capi,	cupiui, &c.	I have contain- ed, &c.
	cupíste,	cupisti,	contentus sum vel fui, &c.	I have been contained, &c.
First Perf.	cupíste,	cupistis,		
	cupieron.	cupierunt,		
Second Perf.	he	Ha,	continui, &c.	I have contain- ed, &c.
	as	Hai,	contentus sum vel fui, &c.	I have been contained, &c.
Second Perf.	a	Ha,		
	avémos	Habíamos,		
Second Perf.	avéys	Havéis,		
	an	Hámo,		
Imper- fect.	avía	Havíamo,	continueram, &c.	I had contain- ed, &c.
	avías	Havíais,	contentus eram vel fueram, &c.	I had been con- tained, &c.
Imper- fect.	avía	Havémo,		
	avíamos	Havíamos,		
Imper- fect.	avíades	Havíades,		
	avían	Havían,		
Future.	cabré,	caperé,	continēbo, &c.	I shall or will containe, &c.
	cabrás,	capirás,	continēbis, &c.	I shall or will be contained, &c.
Future.	cabrá,	capirá,		
	cabrémos,	capirémo,		
Future.	cabréys,	capiréis,		
	cabrán.	capirán.		

## Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as CABER.

CABER

## Subiunctive mode.

Spanish.		Italian.	Latine.	
Pres. Como	Quépa, Quépas, Quépa,	Quando Capisca, Capisci, Capisca, Capiamo, Capiate, Capiscano.	Cum Contineam, &c. Continear, &c.	When I do contain, &c. When I am con- tained, &c.
	Quepamos, Quepays, Quepan.			
Imper- fra. Como	Cupiéra, cabría, cupiéffe. Cupiéras, cabrias, cupiéffes, Cupiéra, cabría, cupiéffe, Cupiéramos, cabríamos, cupiéffemos, Cupiérades, cabriades, cupiéffedes, Cupiéran, cabrían, cupiéffén.	Quando Capissi, caperérei, caperia, Capisti, caperésti, Capissi, caperébbe, caperia Capissimo, capirémmo, Capiste, capiréste, Capissero, capirébbano, ca- piriano.	Cum Continerem, &c. Continerer, &c.	When I do con- taine, &c. When I was con- tained, &c.
Perfett. Como	A'ya, áyas, áya, Ayámos, ayáys, áyan,	Cabido. Habbi, Habbi, Habbi, Habbiámo, Habbiáte, Habbiáno,	Cum Continuerim, &c. Contentus sum, &c.	When I have con- tained, &c. When I have bene contained, &c.
Plusq. Como	Uviéra, o3 uviéffe, uviéras, o3 uviéffes, uviéra, o3 uviéffe, uviéramos, o3 uviéffemos, uviérades, o3 uviéffedes, uviéran, o3 uviéffén,	Cabido. Hauissi, & baueréi, Hauissi, & bauerésti, Hauissi, & bauerébbe, Hauissimo, & bauerémmo, Hauiste, & baueréste, Hauissero, & bauerébbano	Cum Cōtinu- issem, &c. Contentus esset, &c.	When I had con- tained, &c. When I hadden, &c.
Future. Como	Cupiére, Cupiéres, Cupiére, Cupiéremos, Cupiéredes, Cupiéren.		Cum Continuero, &c. Contentus ero, &c.	When I shall con- taine, &c. When I shall be contained, &c.

## Infinitive mood Present tense.

CABER, ]	Capere, ]	Continere, ] to containe, &c. Contineri, ] to be contained, &c.
Pluperfect tense.		
avér Cabido, ]	hauer capito, ]	Continuisse, ] to have contained, &c. Contentum esse vel fuisse, ] to have bene contained, &c.
Gerund.		
Cabiéndo, ]	Capendo, ]	Continendo, ] In containing, &c. In being contained, &c.
Participle.		
Cabido, ]	capito, ]	Contentus, ] contained.



## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

VER.

Of Verbes Irregular the second Coniugation in ER, as VER, in Italian  
*Vedere*, Latine *Videre*, to see.

## Indicative mood.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.	
Pres.	{ YO VE'O, tu Vés, aquél Vée,	{ IO Vedo & VEGGIO, tu Védi, colui Vede,	{ Video, &c.	{ I doe see, &c.
	{ Vémós, Vés, Véan.	{ Vediamo, & Veggiamo, Vedete, Vedano, & Veggano.		
Imper- fect.	{ Via, Vias, Via,	{ Vedina, & Vedina, Vedui, Veduna, & Vedica,	{ Videbam, &c.	{ I did see, &c.
	Como { Viamos, Viades, Vian,	{ Vediamo, Vedute, Vediamo, & Vedano.		
First Perfect.	{ Vi o, Vide, Viste, o, Viste, Vió, o, Vido,	{ Vidi, o, Vidi, Vedisti, Vidda.	{ Vidi, &c.	{ I have seen, &c.
	{ Vimos, Vistes, Viéron.	{ Vidsimo, Vidisti, Viddero.		
Second Perfect.	{ He as a Hémos avéys an	{ Ho Hal Ha Habbiamo Havéys Hanno	{ Vidi, &c. Veduto, o, Visto.	{ I have seen, &c.
	{ Avia Avias Avia	{ Hancina Hancui Hancua		
Pluper- fect.	{ Aviamos Aviades Avian	{ Havendamo Havénate Havénano	{ Videram, &c. Veduto, o, Visto.	{ I had seen, &c.
	{ Veré, Verát, Verá,	{ Vederó, & Vederó, Vederá, & Vederá, Vederá, & Vederá.	{ Videro, &c.	{ I shall see, &c.
Future.	{ Verémós, Veréys, Verán.	{ Vederemo, & Vederemo, Vederéte, & Vederéte, Vederanno, & Vederanno.		

## Imperative mood.

{ Vée tu, Véa aquél,	{ Veduto, Veda, & veggacoli,	{ Vide, vide- te, &c.	{ See thou, &c.
{ Vémós, Véd, Véan.	{ Veggiamo, Vedete, Vedano, & Veggano.		

In the Subjunctive and Infinitive mood altogether as verbes foregoing, as the Present  
 tense Vea, the Imperfect Viéra, vería, viéste, the Imperfect aya visto, the Imperfect  
 perfect uviéra, o, uviéste, visto, the Future, viére, Infinitive, ver, Participle, visto.

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

61

Solér, to be wont or accustomed. Indicatif. Pres. yo Suelo, I am wont, tu Suelas, aquel Suelo, thou art wont, he is wont. Salémos, we are wont, Soléys, ye are wont, Suelen, they are wont. Imperfect. Solia. Partic. Soli. In like manner Dolér, to grieve, to be sorry, declined, yo Duelo, Dolia, Doli, He Dolido, &c.

Of the third and last Coniugation of Verbs Irregular in IR. or Yr. as  
VENIR, in Italian and Latine Venire, to Come.

VENIR.

## Indicative mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.
	yo V'ENGO, tu Viénes, aquel Viéne.	io V'ENGO, tu vieni, colui viene.	Venis, &c.
Pres.	Plur. Venimos, Venís, Viénen.	Veniamo, Venite, Vengono.	I do come, &c.
	Venis, Venís, Venís,	Veniva, Venivi, Veniva.	Veniebam, &c.
Im- perf.	Veníamos, Veníades, Venían.	Venivamo, Venivate, Venivano.	I did come, &c.
	Vine, Veniste, Vino,	Venni, Venisti, Venne.	Veni, &c.
Part. Pres.	Venimos, Veniste, Venieron.	Venimmo, Veniste, Vennero.	I have come, &c.
	Ha as a	Sono sei è	Veni, &c.
Part. Pres.	Hémos avéys an	Siamo Siete Sono	I have come, &c.
	Avia Avias Avia	E'ra eri era	Veneram, &c.
Plur. perf.	Avíamos Avíades Avían	Eravamo Eravate Erano	I had come, &c.
	Vendrá ó Verné, Vendrás ó Vernás, Vendrá ó Verhá,	Vendrá ó Verrá, Vendrás ó Verrás, Vendrá ó Verrá.	Veniam, &c.
Fut.	Vendrémos ó Vernémos, Vendréys ó Vernéys, Vendrán ó Vernán.	Vendrémos ó Verrémos, Vendréis ó Verréis, Vendrán ó Verrán.	I shall or will come, &c.



## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

## Imperatius mode.

Ven tu,  
Venga aquél.  
  
Vengámos,  
Venid,  
Vengan.

Vientu,  
Venga colui.  
  
Veniamo,  
Venite,  
Vengano.

Veni, Venite, Comethou, &c.  
&c.

## Subiunctive mod.

## Spanish.

**Pres.**  
Como Venga,  
vengas,  
venga,  
  
vengámos,  
vengáys,  
vengan.

**Imper.**  
Como Viniéra, vernia, viniéssse,  
viniéras, vernias, viniésses,  
viniéra, vernia, viniéssse,  
  
Viniéramos, verniamos, viniésssemos,  
viniérades, verniades, viniéssseades,  
viniéran, vernian, viniésssen.

**Imper.**  
fec. Como áya,  
áyas,  
áya,  
  
áyamos,  
áyays,  
áyan.

**pluper.**  
fec. Como Uviéra, o3 uviéssse,  
uviéras, o3 uviésses,  
uviéra, o3 uviéssse,  
  
uviéramos, o3 uviésssemos,  
uviérades, o3 uviéssseades,  
uviéran, o3 uviésssen.

**First**  
future. Como veniere,  
venieres,  
veniere,  
  
veniéremos,  
venieredes,  
veniéren.

**second**  
future. Como Uviére, o3 avré,  
uviéres, o3 avrás,  
uviére, o3 avrá,  
  
uviéremos, o3 avrémos,  
uviéredes, o3 avréys,  
uviéren, o3 avrán,

## Italian.

**Quando**  
Venga,  
venghi,  
venga,  
  
veniamo,  
venite,  
vengano.

**Quando**  
Veniessi, venissi, venissi, venissi,  
venissi, venissi, venissi, venissi,  
venissi, venissi, venissi, venissi,  
  
venissimo, venissimo, venissimo,  
venissimo, venissimo, venissimo,  
venissimo, venissimo, venissimo, venissimo.

**Quando**  
sia,  
sia & sia, } Venuto.  
sia,  
  
siamo, } Venuti.  
siano,  
siano,

**Venido.**  
fosse, sarei, } Venuto.  
fosse, sarei, } Venuto.  
fosse, sarei, } Venuto.  
  
fossem, saremmo, } Venuti.  
fossem, saremmo, } Venuti.  
fossem, saremmo, } Venuti.

**Venire.**  
venire,  
venire,  
venire,  
  
veniremo,  
veniremo,  
veniremo.

**Venire.**  
sarò,  
sarai, } Venuto.  
sarà,  
  
saremo, } Venuti.  
sarete,  
saremo,

## Latin.

**Cum**  
Veniam,  
&c.  
When I  
do come,  
&c.

**Cum**  
Venirem,  
&c.  
When I  
did come,  
&c.

**Cum**  
Veniero,  
&c.  
When I  
have  
come, &c.

**Cum**  
Venissem,  
&c.  
When I  
had come  
&c.

**Cum**  
Veniero,  
&c.  
When I  
shall or  
will come,  
&c.

**Cum**  
Veniero,  
&c.  
When I  
shall or  
will come,  
&c.

Infinitive



# Declining of Verbes Irregular.

63

## Infinitive mod Present tense.

Venir, ] Venire, ] Venire, ] To come.

Interperfect tense.

Ser venido, ] Essere venuto, ] Venisse, ] To have come.

Future tense.

Aver o3 esperar de venir { <sup>Dover venire,</sup>  
 { <sup>Haver a venire,</sup> Futurum esse, ] To come hereafter.  
 { <sup>Esser per venire,</sup>

Gerund.

Veniendo, ] Venendo, Veniendo, ] In coming.

Participle of the Present and Active voice.

El que viene, ] Veniente, ] Veniens, ] One coming.

Participle of the Preterite and Passive voice, &c.

Venido, ] Venuto, ] Qui venit, ] Come.

These Verbes following in Ir, thus formed in the Present and Interperfect Tense.

Infinitives.	Pres.	Preterp.
Adormir, to fall asleep,	yo Aduermo,	Adormi.
Dormir, to sleep,	yo Duermo,	Dormi.
Avertir, to marke,	yo Avierito,	Averti.
Arrepentir, to repent,	yo Arrepiento,	Arrepenti.
Cobrir, to recover,	yo Cubro,	Cobri.
Concebir, to conceive,	ye Concibo,	Concebi.
Cernir, to sift meal,	yo Cigno,	Cerni.
Consentir, to consent,	yo Consiento,	Consenti.
Elegir, to choose out,	yo Elijo,	E ligi.
Fingir, to feine,	yo Fingo,	Fingi.
Gemir, to groan,	yo Gimo,	Gemi.
Mentir, to lie,	yo Miento,	Menti.
Ungir, to anoint,	yo Ungio,	Ungi.
Salir, to go forth,	yo Salgo,	Saly.
Diferir, to differ,	yo Diferio,	Diferi.

Imperfect of the Indicative. Diferia.

Imperfect of the Subjunctive. Diferiria.

Sofrir, to suffer, yo Sofro, Sofri.

Imperfect of the Indicative. Sofria.

Imperfect of the Subjunctive. Sofriria.

The Compounds of this verbe Venir, Vengo, are declined in every respect in all Modes and Tenses throughout as it is, as Revenir, to returne, Revengo, Revine, &c. Convenir, to agree, to be expedient, yo Convengo, Convine. Devenir, to become, yo Devengo, Devine. Sobrevener, to come upon suddenly, yo Sobrevengo, Sobrevine.

of the third and last Conjugation of Verbes Irregular in IR, & YR, as Decir, ] in Italian Dire, ] Latine Dicere ] to say.

DEZIR.

## Indicative mod.

Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.
Pres. { Digo, dices, dize, decimos, decis, dizen.	{ Dico, dici, ophi, dice, dicemo, dite, dicono,	{ Dico, &c. I say, &c.
		Imperfect

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Imper.	Dezia, deziás, dezia,	Dicho.	Diceua, diciui, diceua.	Dicho.	I did say, &c.
	Dezíamos, deziades, dezián.		diceuamo, diceuáte, diceuano.		
First Perfec.	dixe, dixiste, dixo,	Dicho.	dixi, dixisti, dixi.	Dicho.	I have said, &c.
	diximos, dixistes, dixéron.		diximmo, dixistis, dixeru.		
Second Perf.	hé, as, a,	Dicho.	He Hui Ha	Dicho.	I have said, &c.
	hémos, avéys, án,		Habíamos Havíste Hávano		
Super- tra.	avía, avias, avía,	Dicho.	Havía Havíui Havía	Dicho.	I had said, &c.
	avíamos, avíades, avían,		Havíamos Havíste Havían		
Future.	diré, dirás, dirá,	Dicho.	diré, dirás, dirá,	Dicho.	I shall say, &c.
	diremos, diréys, dirán.		diremo, diréte, diréno.		

## Imperative mod.

Impe- rative mod.	Di tu, diga aquel,	Dicho.	Di, or dice tu, dica colui,	Dicho.	I say, &c.
	digamos, dezid, digan.		decimo, diz, dicano.		

Note that you shall finde with good Authors Dixi for Dezid, in the second person plural number of the Imperative.

## Subjunctive mode.

Spanish.	Diga, Digas, Diga,	Italian.	Diga, Digli, Dica,	Latin.	when I do say, &c.
	Digamos, Digáys, Digan.		Diciamo, Diciate, Dicano.		

Imperfect



# Declining of Verbes Irregular.

65

Imper- fect. Como	Dixéra, diria, dixesse, Dixéras, dirias, dixesses, Dixéra, diria, dixesse, Dixéramos, diríamos, dixiésemos, Dixérades, diríades, dixiéssedes, Dixéran, dirían, dixiéssen.	Quando	Direi, dicéssi, deria, Diresti, dicésti, Direbbe, diceste, deria.	Cum	Dicerem, Ec.	When I was say, &c.
Perf. Como	A'ya, áyas, áya, Ayámos, ayáys, áyan,	dicho.	Había, Habí, Habíe, Habíamos, Habíais, Habíais, Habíamos, Habíais, Habíais, Habíais,	Cum	Dixerim, Ec.	When I have said, &c.
Super- fect. Como	uviéra, o3 uviéssé, uviéras, o3 uviésses, uviéra, o3 uviéssé, uviéramos, o3 uviéssémos, uviérades, o3 uviéssedes, uviéran, o3 uviéssen,	dicho.	Hauíssi, Hauíssi, Hauíssi, Hauíssimo, Hauíssimo, Hauíssimo, Hauíssimo, Hauíssimo, Hauíssimo, Hauíssimo,	Cum	Dixissim, Ec.	When I had said, &c.
First Future. Como	Dixere, Dixeres, Dixere, Dixeremos, Dixeredes, Dixerén.			Cum	Dixero, &c.	When I shal o3 will say, &c.
Second Future. Como	uviére, o3 avré, uviéres, o3 avrás, uviére, o3 avré, uviéremos, o3 avrémos, uviéredes, o3 avréys, uviéren, o3 avrán,	dicho.	Hauiré, Hauiré, Hauiré, Hauiré, Hauiré, Hauiré, Hauiré, Hauiré, Hauiré, Hauiré,	Cum	Dixero, &c.	When I shal o3 will say, &c.

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

DE ZIR, ]	Dire, ]	Dixere, ]	to say, to tell.
Interperfect tense.			
Avér Dicho, ]	hauer Dicho, ]	Dixissi, ]	to have said o3 told.
Future tense.			
Avér de Dezir, ]	Douer dire, Esser per dire, Hauer a dire, ]	Disturum esse, ]	to say hereafter.
Gerunds.			
Deziendo, ]	Dicendo, ]	Dicendo, ]	In saying.
Participle of the Present tense and Active voice.			
El que Dize, ]	Dicente, ]	Dicens, ]	one telling o3 saying.
Participle of the Past tense and Passive voice.			
Dicho, ]	Detto, ]	Dissim, ]	told, said, spoken.
Participle of the Future tense.			
El que ha, o3 Espera de Dezir, ]	Douendo dire, Hauendo a dire, Essendo per dire, ]	Disturum, ]	about to say hereafter.



## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

The Compounds of this verbe Dezir, Digo, in all points theow all Words and Tenses declined like the Simple, as

Infinitives.	Pres.	Preterp.
Biendezir, to besse,	yo Biendigo,	Biendixe.
Maldezir, to curse,	ye Maldigo,	Maldixe.
In like sort these following thus,		
Conduzir, to conduct,	yo Conduigo,	Conduixe.
Introduzir, to bring in,	yo Introduigo,	Introduixe.
Induzir, to induce,	yo Induigo,	Induixe.
Traduzir, to translate,	yo Traduigo,	Traduixe.
Produzir, to produce,	yo Produigo,	Produixe.
Salir, to goe forth,	yo Salgo,	Salí.
Regir, to governe,	yo Rijo,	Regí.

After the manner of Dezir, is this verbe Salir, to goe out or make a sally, declined, as in the Present tense of the Indicative mood yo Salgo, I goe out, tu Sales, thou goest out, &c. Preterimperfect yo Salia, &c. First Preterperfect, Salí. Second Preterperfect, he Salido, &c. Imperfect. avia Salido. Future, yo Saldré. Imperative Sal tu, goe thou out, Salga aquél, let him goe out, &c. Subjunctive Present tense, yo Salga, tu Salgas, &c. Preterimperfect Saliera, Saldria, Saliese, &c. Preterperfect, aya Salido. Imperfect, uviéra Salido. Future, Saliere. Infinitive, Salir. Gerund Saliendo. Participle Salido.

So Seguir to follow, yo Sigo, Sigas, Sigui. He Seguido, avia Seguido, Seguiré. Imperative, Sigue tu, follow thou. Siga aquél, let him follow, Sigamos, let us follow, Seguid, follow ye, Sigán, let them follow. Subjunctive Present, Como yo Siga. Imperfect, Sigiera, Seguiria, Siguiése. Preterperfect, aya Seguido. Imperfect, uviése Seguido. Future, Seguire, &c. Infinitive, Seguir, Participle Seguido. So in all points to Concluir to obtain, declines.

Sumir, to drench or overwhelm, differing from Sumar, to summe up, thus. In the Present of the Indicative all one yo Sumo. Imperfect yo Sumia, I did drench, yo Sumia, I did summe up. First Perfect, yo Sumí, I have drenched, tu Sumiste, aquél Sumió, ye Sumó, I have summe up, tu Sumiste, thou hast summed up, aquél Sumó, he hath summed up, &c.

Of the third and last Coniugation of Verbes Irregular in IR or YR, as YR, in Italian Ire or Andare, in Latine Ire, to Go.

## Indicative mood.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latine.
Pres.	VOY, Vás, Vá.	VO & VADO, Vá, Vá.	Go, I, &c. I goe, thou goest, &c.
	Vámos, Váys, Ván.	Andiamo, Andate, Vanno.	
Imperp. fec.	Y'va, Y'vas, Y'va,	Andino, Andini, Andino,	Thou, &c. I did goe, &c.
	y'vamos, y'vades, y'van.	Andiamo, Andate, Andanno.	
First Perfect.	Fuy, Fuiste, Fué,	Andii, Andisti, Andi,	I, &c. I went, &c.
	Fuímos, Fuistes, Fuéron.	Andimmo, Andiste, Andarono,	

Second

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

67

second perfect.	Me, as a	Y'do.	Sono, Sei, è,	Andato.	Iui, &c.	I have gone, &c.
	Hémos, avéys, an,		Siámo, Sete, Sono,			
3 <sup>d</sup> pers. per.	Avia, Avia, Avia,	Y'do.	Era, Eri, Era,	Andato.	Iucram, &c.	I had gone, &c.
	Aviámos, Aviades, Avian,		Eranámo, Eranáte, E'rans,			
Futur.	Yré, Yrás, Yrés,		Anderó, & Andró, Anderai, & Andrái, Anderá, & Andrá,		Ibe, &c.	I shall or will goe, &c.
	Yrémos, Yréys, Yrán.		Anderímo, & Andrimo, Anderíte, & Andrite, Anderámo, & Andrámo.			
Imperative mode.						
	Va, & Vc, Váya,		Va, Vada, Vadi,			
	Vámos, Vá, Váyan.		Andiamo, Andite, Vidamo, & Vidimo.			

Vete, Vete, Get thee hence, Get thee hence.  
with Imperative the Verbs in sometimes written with Y, sometimes with L.

## Subjunctive mode.

	Spanish.	Italian.	Latin.	
Pres. Como	Váya, Váyas, Váya,	Vada, Vada & Vadi. Vada & Vadi.	Eam, &c.	When I doe go &c.
	Vámos, Váya, Váyan.	Quando Andiamo, Andiate, Vidamo & Vidimo.	Cum	
Imper. Como	Fuéra, Yría, fuéffe, Fuéras, yriás, fuéffes, Fuéran, yrián, fuéffen.	Quando Andassi, Anderéti, Anderia, Andassi, Anderissi, Andasse, Anderibbe, Anderia.	Iram, &c.	When I did goe, &c.
	Fuéramos, yriámos, fuéffemos, Fuérades, yriades, fuéffedes, Fuéran, yrián, fuéffen.	Quando Andassimo, Anderimmo, Andasse, Anderiste, Andassero, Anderibbano, Anderiano.	Cum	
Pres. Como	áya, áyas, áya,	Quando Sia Sij Sia	Iucrim, &c.	When I have gone, &c.
	áyamos, ayáys, áyan,	Quando Siámo Siáte Siáno	Cum	
				Imper.

## Declining of Verbes Irregular.

Plus perfect. Como	} Y'do.	} <sup>Quando</sup> Féssi, sarei Féssi, sarésti Féssi, sarébbe	} Andato.	} <sup>Cum</sup> Inissem, &c.	} When I had gone, &c.
} Como	} Y'do.	} <sup>Quando</sup> Féssimo, sarémmo Féssite, saréste, Féssero, sarébbomo	} Andati.	} <sup>Cum</sup> Inero, &c.	} When I shall or will go, &c.
First future. Como	} Y'do.	} <sup>Quando</sup> Saré Sarai Sarà	} Andato.	} <sup>Cum</sup> Inero, &c.	} When I shall or will go, &c.
Second future. Como	} Y'do.	} <sup>Quando</sup> Sarémo Saréte Sarémmo	} Andati.	} <sup>Cum</sup> Inero, &c.	} When I shall or will go, &c.

## Infinitive mode Present tense.

Y'R ] Andare, ] Iré, ] to Go.

Dietepresent tense.

Aver y'do, ] Haver andato, ] Inisse, ] to have Gone.

Future tense.

Aver de yr, } Douter Andare, }  
Haver ad Andare, }  
Esser per Andare, } Iterum esse, ] to Go hereafter.

Gerund.

Yendo, ] Andando, ] Iundo, ] In Going.

Duplicative.

Yr, ] Andare, ] Ium, ] to Go.

De ser ydo, ] Esser Andato, ] Iu, ] to be Gone.

Participle of the Present tense and Same voice.

El que va, ] Andante, ] Eunt, ] one Going.

Participle of the Dietepresent tense and Passive voice.

Y'do, ] Andato, ] Gone.



## Of Verbes Impersonals.

The Spanish as the French and Italian Impersonals are of the manner of the Latines, which want the first and second person, and are declined onely in the third person thowout all Moods and Tenses, as,

## Indicative mood.

Present.	Ay,	There is.
Imperfect.	Avia,	There was.
1 Perfect.	uvo,	There was.
2 Perfect.	á,	There hath bene.
Imperfect.	avia,	There had bene.
Future.	Avrá,	There shall be, &c.
Imperat.	Aya,	Let there be.

## Subjunctive mood.

Present.	Aya,	When there is.
Imperfect.	uviéra, avría, uviéssé,	When there was.
Perfect.	aya Avido,	When there hath bene.
Imperfect.	uviéra o3 uviéssé Avido,	When there had bene.
Future.	uviéra o3 Avra Avido.	When there shall be.

Note that the Spaniard almost continually useth this Impersonall Ay as the French their *il y a*, in English *There is*, as by observing you shall most usually finde, as also this third person Completing declined, of Complexe the Infinitive.

## Indicative mood.

Present.	Comple,	Decet, Oportet,	It becometh o3 becometh.
Imperfect.	Complia,	Deceret, Oportebat,	It did besome.
1 Perfect.	Complió,	Decuit, Oportuit,	It hath besomed, &c.
2 Perfect.	a Complido,	Decuit, Oportuit,	
Imperfect.	Avia Complido,	Decuerat, Oportuerat.	
Future.	Complirá,	Decabit, Oportebit.	

And so thowout the third person of the rest.

## Indicative mood.

Present.	E's,	There is.
Imperfect.	era,	There was.
1 Perfect.	fue,	There hath bene.
2 Perfect.	avia Sído,	There hath bene.
Imperfect.	avia Sído,	There had bene.
Future.	Será,	There shall be, &c.

And so decline forward, as in the Subjunctive mood of the verbe Ser, Soy alsoe going in the third person onely.

## Indicative mood.

Present.	Es menester,	Oportet,	It behoveth.
Imperfect.	era menester,	Oportebat,	It did behove.
1 Perfect.	fue menester,	Oportuit,	It hath behoven.
2 Perfect.	a sido menester,	Oportuit,	It hath behoven.
Imperfect.	avia sido menester,	Oportuerat,	It had behoven.
Future.	avra menester,	Oportebit,	It will behove.

And so thowout the rest, &c.

This verbe Impersonall Plazer declined.

## Indicative mood.

Present.	Plaze,	It pleaseth.
Imperfect.	Plazia,	It did please.
1 Perfect.	Pligo,	It hath pleased.
2 Perfect.	a Plazido,	It hath pleased.
Imperfect.	avia Plazido,	It had pleased.
Future.	Plazará,	It will please.
Imper.	Pléga,	Let it please.

Subjunctive

## Indicative mood.

Present.	Pléga,	When it doth please.
Imperf.	Pluguiéra, Pluguiése,	When it did please.
Perfect.	áya Plazido,	When it hath pleased.
Imperf.	uviéra Plazido,	When it had pleased.
Future.	Plugulére,	When it will please.

To forme an Impersonall of the Passive voice, you must take this particle Se, and the third person of any verbe thus: which particle so added, makes a verbe Impersonall Passive, as,

Present.	Se Dize,	Si dice o3 dicefi,	Dicitur,	It is said o3 spoken,
Imperf.	Se Dezía,	Si dicéan o3 dicéanfi, &c.	Dicebatur, &c.	It was said o3 spoken,
Perfect.	Se Dixo,			&c.
Imperf.	Se a Dicho,			
Imperf.	S'avía Dicho,			
Future.	Se Dirá.			

## Of Participles.

## Participle of the Present tense.

In Spanish, Participles of the Present tense and active signification, are made of the third person Present tense of the Indicative mood of the same Verbe, putting before it the Relative, El que, as El que Revela, revealing, Latine *Revelans*: El que Entiende, understanding, in Latine *Intelligens*: El que oye, hearing, in Latine *Audiens*.

## Participle of the Preter tense.

Participles of the Preter tense, and passive signification end in ádo, ido, o3 ydo, which in the first conjugation are formed of the third person of the Present tense of the Indicative mood, by adding to do, as Revela, reveládo: Ama, amádo: Castiga, castigado: and in the second and third conjugation of the same Present tense, by changing e, into ido, and ydo, as Entiende, entendido: Lee, Leydo: Cree, creydo: Pide, pedido.

But for the Irregular (according to the nature of the word) without rule, as Factus, fecho, made: Dicho, Dicho, said, spoken.

## Participle of the Future tense.

The Future tense with this Verbe Ha, o3 Espéra, and the Infinitive of the Verbe, as El que ha, o3 Espéra de revelar, Entender, o3 oyr: *Revelaturus, Intelligens, Auditus*, about to reveale, about to understand, about to hear.

## Present.

Participle of the Present tense, and active signification.

El que revela, entiende, oye, Latine *Revelans, Intelligens, Audiens*, Revealing, understanding, hearing.

## Preter.

Participle of the Preter tense and passive signification.

Reveládo, Entendido, oydo, Latine *Revelatus, Intellectus, Auditus*, Revealed, understood, heard.

## Future.

Participle of the Future tense.

El que ha o3 espéra de Revelar, Entender, oyr, Latine *Revelaturus, Intellecturus, Auditus*, to reveale hereafter, to understand hereafter, to hear hereafter.

## Of Adverbs.

## Adverbs formed of Pounes of the feminine gender in a. Nota.

I have handled before the four parts of French declension. Now come we to the other four undeclined, called *Indeclinabiles*, beginning first with the Adverbs, whereof some in the Spanish tongue are formed of Pounes of the feminine gender in a, as are almost all the Degrees of Qualitie, as Alta, high; Altamente, highly; Graciosa, graciously; Luenga, luengamente; in Latine *Div, long*: which manner of forming the Italian likewise observeth, as *Gratiosamente, Luengamente, Santamente*. As with the French, making the word to end in *Ment*, as *Gratiosamente, Luengamente, Santamente*. Wherefore I think good to set downe the Adverbs following in the rest: first, the Spanish, then Italian, after French, next Latine, and last English: every one separated one from another with this crosse thus, ] Adverbs some be



of Qualitie. { Fielmente, ] *Fidelmente*, ] *Fidelement*, ] *Fideliter*, ] Faithfully.  
 Buénamente, o3 bien ] *Bene*, ] *Bien*, ] *Bene*, ] Well.  
 Malamente, o3 mal, ] *Male*, ] *Mauaisement*, ] *Male*, ] Ill.  
 De buéna gana ] *Di buona voglia*, } Voluntiers, de bon cuer, ] *Libenter*, ] Willingly.  
 Volontieri voluntieramente, }

of Quantitie. { Mucho, ] *Molto*, ] Beaucoup, [ *Multum vel Multo* ] Much.  
 Poco, ] *Poco*, ] *Peu*, ] *Parum vel Paululum*, ] A little.  
 Múcho mas, ] *Via piu*, ] Beaucoup plus, ] *Multo magis*, ] Much more.  
 Mas, ] *Piu*, ] *Plus*, ] *Magis*, ] More.  
 Por de mas, ] *Troppo*, ] Trop, ] *Nimis*, ] Too much.  
 Demasiádo, ] *Troppo* ] Trop, ] *Nimis*, ] Too much.

of Time. { Oy, ] *Hoggi*, ] Auiourd'huy, ] *Hodie*, ] To day.  
 Ayér ] *Hieri ieri*, ] Hier, ] *Hieri* ] Yesterday.  
 Mañana, ] *Domani*, ] Demain, ] *Cras*, ] To morrow.  
 Antier, ] *Antieri*, ] Deuant hier, ] *Pridie*, ] The other day.  
 El dia siguiente, ] *Il seguente giorno*, ] Le lendemain, ] *Postridie*, ] The next day after  
 to morrow.  
 Mucho ha, ] *Molto fa*, ] Deja long temps, ] *Iamdudum*, ] Long since.  
 Poco ha, ] *Poco fa*, ] Nagueres, ] *Iamdudum*, ] A little since.  
 Agora, ] *ora*, ] acest heure, ] *iamjam*, ] Even now.  
 Antes ] *Inarri*, ] Deuant, ] *Ante*, ] Before.  
 Luégo, ] *Presto*, *Tosto*, ] Soudainement, ] *illico*, *statim*, ] Forthwith, by and by.  
 Núnca, ] *Giamai*, ] Jamais, ] *Nunquam*, ] Neuer.  
 Quando, ] *Quando*, ] Quand, ] *Quando*, ] When.  
 Siémpre, ] *Sempre* ] Tousjours, ] *Semper*, ] Alwaies.  
 Entónce, ] *Al hora*, ] Donques, ] *Tunc*, ] Then.  
 Mientras, ] *Mentre*, ] Cependant, ] *Interim*, ] In the meane while.  
 Súbito, ] *Subito*, ] Soudainement, ] *Subito*, ] Suddenly.  
 Muchas vezes, ] *Molte volte*, *Molte fiate*, ] Fort souvent, ] *Sape*, ] Uery often.  
 Pocas vezes, ] *Rade volte*, ] Peu souvent, ] *Rare*, ] Seldome.  
 Algunas vezes, ] *Qual che volte*, } Quelquefois, ] *Aliquando*, ] Sometime.  
 Qual che fiate, }

of Place. { A QVI, ] *Qui, quia*, ] Icy, ] *Hic*, *huc*, ] Here.  
 Ay, allí, alla, ] *Ibi, la, colá, quia*, ] La audela, ] *Illic*, ] There.  
 A Donde, ] *Dane, eue*, ] Ou, ] *Vbi que*, ] Whither, where.  
 De Donde, ] *Onde, donde*, ] Dont, d'ou, ] *Vnde*, ] from whence.  
 Acá, ] *Di qua*, ] Paricy, ] *Hac*, ] this way.  
 Acullá, ] *Colá per quia*, ] Par dela, ] *Illic, illic*, ] that way.  
 De aquí, ] *De qui, Quia*, ] D'icy, ] *Hinc*, ] from hence.  
 De allí, de allá, ] *Indi, di la, Quia*, ] Dela, ] *Illic*, ] from hence.  
 Dentro, ] *Dentro, entro*, ] Dedans, ] *Intra*, ] within.  
 Fuéra, ] *Fuori, di fuori*, ] Hors, de hors, ] *Foris, foras*, ] without.  
 Delante, ] *Inarri*, ] Deuant, ] *Ante*, ] Before.  
 Atrás, ] *Dietro*, ] Derrier, ] *Post*, ] Behind.  
 Aparte, ] *De banda*, ] a l'escart, ] *Separatim, seorsum*, ] aside, a part, by it selfe.  
 Arriba, ] *Sopra, di sopra*, ] In su, *suse*, ] En haut, ] *Superius*, ] Above.  
 Abáxo, ] *In gin, giú, sotto, di sotto*, ] En bas, ] *Downum*, ] Beneath.  
 Cerca, ] *Intorno, dattorno*, ] Enuiron, ] *Circiter*, ] About, nigh vnto, almost.  
 Cabe, junto, ] *Appresso, dinicina*, ] Prest, aupres, ] *Prope*, ] Nere vnto.  
 Lénos, ] *Lontano, di lungi*, ] Loia, ] *Præter*, ] Far off.  
 Encima, ] *Su, sopra*, ] Sur, dessus, ] *Super*, ] Upon.  
 So, ] *Sotto, di sotto*, ] Dessous, ] *Subter*, ] Under.

of Affirming. { SI, as Si Senor, ] *Si, as Signore Si*, ] Ouy, as ouy Mounseieur, ] *Illa, illa Domine*, ] Yea, yea sir,  
 Ciertro, ciertamente, ] *Certe, certamente*, ] Certes, ] *Cerid, cerid*, ] Truly.  
 En verdád, verdaderamente, ] *In verita, di vero, in vero*, ] Vrayement, en verite, cer-  
 tainement, ] *Verid*, ] Truly, in truth, verily.  
 Tambien, ] *Si bene, etiam, ancor, anche*, ] Si bien, ains, aussi, ] *Etiam, quoque*, ] also  
 well.  
 Antes, ] *Piu tosto*, Plustost, ] *Prius*, ] Rather.



- Of Denying.** { NO, ] *Non, ne, ne,* ] Non, neny, pas, point, ] *Non, baud, minims,* ] *Not.*  
*Nada, No nada,* ] *Niente, nulla,* ] *Rien,* ] *Nil,* ] *Nothing,* nothing at all.  
*Ni, Tam poco,* ] *Ne,* ] *Ni, ne,* ] *Neque,* ] *Neither.*
- Of numbring.** { VNAVEZ, ] *Vna volta, Vna fiate,* ] *Vne fois,* ] *Semel,* ] *Once.*  
*Dos vezes,* ] *Dus volte, Due fiate,* ] *Deux fois,* ] *Bi,* ] *Twice.*  
*Tres vezes,* ] *Tre volte, tre fiate,* ] *Trois fois,* ] *Ter,* ] *Thrice,* &c. as in the *Phonons*  
*before of Numbers.*  
*Muchas vezes,* ] *s'pesso volte, molte fiate,* ] *Beaucoup de fois,* ] *Sape,* ] *Ofentimes.*  
*Pocas vizes,* ] *Rade volte,* ] *Rarement,* ] *Rara,* ] *Seldoms.*
- Of shewing.** [HEA QVI, ] *Ecco,* ] *Voicy, voila,* ] *Ecc,* ] *Behold.*
- Of Encouraging.** [E A, ] *E A Pues,* ] *Su, coraggia,* ] *Sus, courage,* ] *Ago, pergo,* ] *Go to then.*
- Of increasing.** { MAS, ] *Piu,* ] *Plus,* ] *Plus,* ] *More.*  
*Mucho mas,* ] *Molto piu, molto assai,* ] *Beacoup plus,* ] *Molto magis,* ] *Much more.*  
*De masiado,* ] *Troppo, di fuerchia,* ] *Trop,* ] *Nimium,* ] *Too much.*
- Of Diminishing.** { ME'NOS, ] *Meno,* ] *Moins,* ] *Poulo minus,* ] *Less.*  
*Poco, a Poco,* ] *Poco, a Poco,* ] *Pcu, a Peu,* ] *Paulatin,* ] *By little and little.*  
*Passo,* ] *Pian, piano,* ] *Tout bellement, Petit a petit,* ] *Sensin,* ] *Soft and faire.*
- Of wishing.** { O XALA, ] *O Dio voglia, Dio voless,* ] *Pleust a Dieu,* ] *Vinam,* ] *Would to God,*  
*I pray God.*  
*O Si,* ] *O se, O se,* ] *Pleust a Dieu que,* ] *Vinam,* ] *Would to God, I pray God.*
- Of Asking.** { PORQUE, ] *Perche?* ] *Pourquoy?* ] *Quare?* ] *Why & Wherefore?*  
*Que?* ] *Che?* ] *Quoy?* ] *Quid?* ] *What?*  
*Donde?* ] *Ove?* ] *Ou,* ] *Ubi, que,* ] *Where.*  
*Adonde,* ] *Dont,* ] *Ou,* ] *Quo,* ] *Whether.*  
*De Donde,* ] *Onde,* ] *D'on, dont,* ] *Unde,* ] *From whence.*  
*Quando?* ] *Quando?* ] *Quand?* ] *Quando?* ] *When.*
- Of doubting.** { QVI, ] *A,* ] *Forse, a caso,* ] *Fortuitement,* ] *Fortassis,* ] *Perhaps.*  
*Porventura,* ] *Peraventure,* ] *Paraentura,* ] *Fortasse,* ] *Peraventure, Perhaps.*
- Of Order.** { DESPVE'S, ] *Poi, dipoi, Dopo, doppo,* ] *A pres, depuis,* ] *Poi,* ] *After.*  
*Allende de esto,* ] *Oltra a cio, oltra a questa,* ] *Ontre ce, d'auantage,* ] *Prateras,* ] *Furthermore.*  
*Finalmente,* ] *Alla fine,* ] *En fin, Finablement,* ] *Tandem,* ] *At length.*
- Of Likeness.** { COMO, ] *Comme,* ] *Comme,* ] *Sicut, velut,* ] *As.*  
*Assi,* ] *cosi,* ] *Ainsi,* ] *Ita, sic,* ] *So.*
- Of Chance.** [ACASO, ] *Por dicho,* ] *A caso,* ] *Fortuitement,* ] *Fortuito,* ] *By chance, by hap.*
- Of Comparison.** { MAS, ] *Piu,* ] *Plus,* ] *Plus,* ] *More.*  
*Menos,* ] *Meno,* ] *Moins,* ] *Minus,* ] *Less.*  
*Mucho mas,* ] *Via piu, Assai piu,* ] *Beaucoup, d'auantage,* ] *Molto magis,* ] *Much more.*  
*Mucha menos,* ] *Molto meno,* ] *Beaucoup moins,* ] *Molto minus,* ] *Much less.*  
*Mejor,* ] *Migliore,* ] *Melieur,* ] *Melius,* ] *Better.*  
*Poor,* ] *Peggior,* ] *Pis,* ] *Pius,* ] *Worse.*  
*Todo del mundo,* ] *Piu del mundo,* ] *Tout le monde,* ] *Maxime,* ] *Chiefly.*
- Gathering together.** [IVNTO, ] *Iuntamente,* ] *Inferno,* ] *Insemble,* ] *Simul,* ] *Together.*
- Seuering.** APARTE, ] *Separatamente,* ] *Afseurt,* ] *Separatim, seorsim,* ] *Indunder.*
- Chusing.** { MAS Ay'na, ] *Piu tosto,* ] *Plustot,* ] *Pius,* ] *Sooner.*  
*Mucho mas,* ] *Molto magis,* ] *Beaucoup mieux,* ] *Potius,* ] *Much Rather.*
- Contrariety.** { TODA vez, ] *Toute via,* ] *Touresfois,* ] *Tamen,* ] *Notwithstanding.*  
*Aunque,* ] *Comme, che, Etiam, che, Anchor che,* ] *Encore,* ] *Etiam,* ] *Sitongh.*  
*With.*

## Of a Coniunction.

73

**Withstanding.** [ALO MENOS,] *Almeno, almanco,* [Au moins,] *At the least.*  
[Sola,] *Sole,* [Sola,] *Solely.*  
[Porque,] *Par, atchie, the,* [Pourceque,] *Propterea,* [For that.

## Of a Coniunction.

**A** Coniunction is that which uniteth and joyneth parts of speech together, and is both the Spanish almost in the same manner as the Latins, seeing they have not so many, but yet some are

**Of coupling.** [Y, and E,] *e,* [et,] *et,* [Et,] *And.*  
[Como,] *Comme,* [Comme,] *Comme,* [Vt,] *Vt.*  
[Tambien,] *Ancor, Anche, Etiam,* [Si bien, ainsi, aussi,] *Xilum, Quoque,* [Also.

**Note.**

That E properly is not a Spanish Coniunction, but only used for the Y, when the word following beginneth with a Y, because two YY, should not come together, La ley e la justicia, and not La ley y la justicia, but otherwise otherwise Y.

**Of Disjoining.** [Ni,] *Ne,* [Ne,] *Nec, Neque,* [Neither.  
[O,] *O, enno,* [Ou,] *Aut, Vt, Vel, Seu, Sine,* [Either.

**Of Causing.** [PORQUE,] *Atchie, Perchie,* [Pourceque] *Propterea quod,* [For that, Therefore.

**Of Conditioning.** [Si,] *Si,* [Si,] *Si,* [If.  
[Dado que,] *Se esse,* [Si aussi,] *Si ita,* [If so.

**Of Excepting.** [SINO,] *Senon,* [Sinon,] *Nisi,* [Except, if not.  
[Mas,] *Ma,* [Mais,] *Quia,* [But.  
[Otramente,] *Altramente,* [Aurement,] *Alloquin,* [Otherwise.

**Of Diminishing.** [ALOMENOS,] *Almeno, Almanco,* [Au moins,] *Saltem,* [At least.

[AVNQUE,] *Ancor, Quantunque,* [Encore,] *Etiam, quaque,* [Although.  
*Donche, Etiam,* [Quamvis,

[TODA via,] *Tuttavia, Tutta via,* [Toutefois,] *Tamen, esto,* [Notwithstanding.  
*Nondimeno, Nondimanco,* [Nondimeno,

## A Preposition.

**Preposition.** The Spanish hath the same use of Prepositions as the Latines have, sometimes by composition with another word, as *Bolver*, to turne; *Rebolver*, to over-turne; *Hazer*, to doe; *Rehazer*, to renew, &c. Sometimes by apposition (as the Latines doe) by putting the Preposition before the Noun, as *Ala corte*, to the Court; *Por el Rey*, for the King; *En la yglesia*, in the Church.

**Note.**

That this Preposition *De*, or *Des*, sometimes makes the word that it is joyned with, of a quite contrary Signification, as *Hazer*, to doe; *Desazer*, to undo; *Azir*, to tie or binde; *Desazar*, to unbinde; *Canfado*, wearie; *Descanfado*, resting; *Dicha*, happiness; *Desdicha*, unhappiness, misfortune; And so in the French, *Faire*, to doe; *Defaire*, to undo; *Lier*, to binde; *Dehier*, to unbinde, &c. Prepositions of the Spanish thus,

*A,* [A,] *Ad,* [Ad,] *To, as A fe, a la fe,* [A fide, A fe,] *Par ma foy,* [Per fidem,] *By my troth.*

*De,* [De, de de,] *De, de,* [De,] *Of or from,* [as De la corte,] *De la corte,* [Du palais,] *From the Court.*

*Para,* [Per,] *Pour,* [Propter,] *For, as Para mi,* [Per me,] *Pour moy,* [Propter me,] *For me.*

*Por,* [Per,] *Par,* [Per,] *For, by or thow, as Por mi vida,* [Per mia vita,] *Par ma vie,* [Per viam,] *By my life.*

Of 3

Contra,







**I** Have for the Learners vse desirous of the tongue, read ouer diuers Authors, gathering out of them the hard Phrases and manner of speech, the vncouth sayings, together with some Prouerbs, as they fall in their places (which are the difficultie of the tongue) and explained them in English, commonly setting downe first the English, word for word as the Spanish is, then this i. for Latine, *id est*, that is to say, for the sense and meaning, then the line and the leafe of the book, that by these the Learner may the better iudge of their like when he meeteth with them. For the leafe I set downe *fol.* and *a.* signifieth the first side of the leafe, and *b.* the second, *lin.* signifieth what line, and the figure after *fol.* telleth the leafe, and *lin.* what line it is. If you finde *pag.* it is to finde what page of the booke. If you see *1. part.* it is for the first volume or part of the book, and *2. part.* for the second, &c.

Words, Phrases, Sentences and Prouerbs out of DIANA of  
Monte Mayor in 16. Printed at Antwerp, 1580.

- Los de mas. *fol. 3. b. lin. 14.* The rest.  
Las horas que se sobravan. *fol. 4. b. lin. 2.* The houres which remained, or the rest of the houres.  
Tomando a vézes. *fol. 4. b. lin. 4.* Taking by fits or turnes.  
Pasár por el pienamiento. *fol. 4. b. lin. 14. and 7. a. lin. 25. and 16. b. 8.* To enter into the minde or thought.  
Tam poco le dáua pena. *fol. 4. b. lin. 17.* Neither did it grieue or trouble him.  
A vuestro salvo. *fol. 6. b. lin. 17.* Your self being safe, or without your owne danger.  
Como los uisite alas manos. *fol. 10. b. lin. 5.* How came they to your hands or how came you by them?  
Por tu vida. *fol. 10. b. lin. 21.* By thy life, i. I say thus heartily.  
Tomár de coro. *fol. 10. b. lin. 23.* To take by quire, i. To haue by memorie, heart, or without book.  
Favorescéme a mí. *fol. 11. b. lin. 5. and Me moviera a mí. fol. 1. a. lin. 8.* To fauour me, and do me me. Here the Spanish hath two accusatives called after the verbe, both of the person; and not as the Latine, one of the person, and another of the thing.  
Después que te fuiste. *fol. 11. b. lin. 21.* After thou wast.  
Yo fui, tu fuiste, aquel fue, nos fuimos, fuistes, fueron. I went, thou wentest, he went, we went, ye went, they went. This Fui, fuiste, cometh of the Infinitive mood *ir*, to go, and the very same Fui, fuiste, fue, &c. cometh of the Infinitive mood *Ser*, to be: but looke back in the Grammar and compare the two verbs together.  
De ay a un poco. *fol. 11. b. lin. 22.* A pretty while after.  
Que es del? *fol. 12. a. lin. 20.* Where is he? What is become of him?  
Quando se pone el Sol. *fol. 13. a. lin. 8.* When the sunne sets.  
Fuera de mí, fuera de ti, fuera de él. *fol. 13. b. lin. 14.* Besides my selfe, besides thy selfe, besides his selfe, or Out of my selfe, out of thy selfe, out of his selfe.  
Tén pánico. *fol. 13. b. lin. 24.* Stay, hold, stop, Give me leave a little.  
Le va bien, le va mal. *fol. 15. a. lin. 7.* It goes well with him, it goes ill with him. He is well, he is ill.  
Mucho a. I good while since.  
Mucho aya, mucho ayo, mucho avia. *fol. 17. a. lin. 4.* It was a good while agoe, it hath bene a good while since, it shall be long agoe.  
Poco ha, o poco ha. I little while agoe, or a little since.  
Poco aya, poco ayo, poco avia. It was a little since, it hath bene but a little since, it shall be but a little while agoe.  
Muchos dias ha, Pocos dias ha. *fol. 17. a. lin. 7.* Many daies since, a few daies since.  
Mucho tiempo ha, Poco tiempo ha. I good while a goe, a little while agoe.  
Grandes dias ha, Pocos dias ha. I great while agoe, a few daies past,  
Cosa en la vida. *fol. 19. a. lin. 12.* Any thing in the world.  
Hazer caso. *fol. 17. b. lin. 21.* To esteem of, to make matter of.  
Muchos ay, o ay muchos. *fol. 20. a. lin. 6.* There are many.  
Que os tengo dicho. *fol. 20. a. lin. 29.* Which I haue told you.  
Quiso mi ventura. *pag. 22. a. lin. 11.* My fortune would haue it so.  
Que de oro no les llevara ventaja. *fol. 21. a. lin. 20. verbatim.* That the bantage of gold did not carrie it away from them, i. Gold did not exceed them in brightness.

Yr a la mano. fol. 22. b. lin. 28. *verbatim*. To goe to ones hand, i. To Rep, to stay, to let, to hinder one from doing any thing.

Desdichado de mí. fol. 22. b. lin. 6. *verbatim*. Wretched of me, i. Wretched that I am, unhappy creature I, woe is me, wretched that I am.

No te háze mucho al caso. fol. 22. b. lin. 11. It makes not much matter to thee, it concerns thee not much.

De véras. fol. 22. b. lin. 20. In earnest.

De burlas. fol. 22. b. lin. 20. In jest.

Toda vía. fol. 23. a. lin. 2. Notwithstanding.

Házér de industria. fol. 23. a. lin. 22. To doe of set purpose.

Plégue a Dios. fol. 23. b. lin. 5. I would to God.

De sy a ocho dias. fol. 24. b. lin. 6. Eight daies hence.

No ay cosa en la vida. fol. 25. a. lin. 14. There is nothing in the world.

Asi púso per obra. fol. 26. b. lin. 11. So he did put it in practice.

Váyan lospiros a cuéntos. fol. 26. a. lin. 21. Let lightes goe by millions.

Y quiera Dios que, &c. fol. 26. b. lin. 4. And would to God that, &c.

Ambos a dos. fol. 26. b. lin. 5. Both.

Fuera de sí. fol. 27. b. lin. 14. Besides himselfe, out of his wits.

Venir a las manos. fol. 27. b. lin. 16. To come to blowes or fight.

Como en ello les fuera la vida. fol. 28. a. lin. 11. As if thereon his life lay.

A bueltas della. fol. 28. b. lin. 13. Together therewith.

Mal aya a aquel. fol. 29. a. lin. 13. Woe be unto him.

Poner el negocio a las manos. fol. 30. b. lin. 24. To bring the matter to blowes or fight.

Que en otra cosa no entendia sino en, &c. fol. 31. b. lin. 24. *verbatim*. Which in any other matter understood not, i. which thought on nothing else but, &c.

Se dexó dormir. fol. 32. a. lin. 25. *verbatim*. Let himselfe or herselfe sleepe, i. fell asleepe.

No se qual me creía. fol. 33. b. lin. 19. I know not which I may believe.

Devio sér. fol. 33. b. lin. 25. *verbatim*. It ought to be, i. it could not be otherwise.

Basta lo hécho. fol. 34. a. lin. 16. It suffices that it is done. Basta lo dicho, it is enough that is once spoken of, or it needs no more sayings.

Como supo callár. fol. 34. a. lin. 19. How he knew to hold her tongue, how well he could be mute, and not answer a word.

Ni por pensamiento en ella. fol. 34. b. lin. 13. By no means.

Querérme mas que a sí. fol. 35. b. lin. 1. To love me more or better then himselfe, or herselfe.

No es de cavallero. fol. 35. b. lin. 26. It is not the part of a Gentleman.

Tenér en mucho, Tener en poco. fol. 36. a. lin. 2. To esteem much, or to set much by, to set little by, or to esteem little.

Y quien se lo dixo, Se lo supo encarecer de manera. fol. 36. a. lin. 25. And he that told it, could tell how to augment and amplify it in such sort.

Asi púse por obra. fol. 36. b. lin. 24. So I put it in practice, or he is a doer.

Asi me fue derecha a la corte. fol. 37. a. lin. 3. And so I went straight to the Court.

Cosas no poco gustosas de oír. fol. 37. a. lin. 5. *verbatim*. Things not little casull to heare, i. Things not a little delightful to heare.

En la voz, or en la habla le conocí. fol. 37. a. lin. 25. I knew him by his voice or speech.

La música dáva a otra no a mí. fol. 38. a. lin. 20. The music pleased to another, and not to me.

Le dáva mucho. fol. 38. a. lin. 9. *verbatim*. Overmuch him much, i. he is much beholding to him.

Esta vellaca de ausencia deshaze las cosas. fol. 38. a. lin. 13. This Rascalls absence doth undo all.

No avrá ninguna que no se pierda por vos. fol. 38. b. lin. 3. There will be none which is not lost in love for you, i. which will not be ready to runne mad for you.

Moça bonita, or bonica. fol. 38. b. lin. 5. A good beauty, a fine trull, maid or girl.

Dár léxos de la verdad. fol. 38. b. lin. 13. To be false or farre off from the truth.

Parecer me hya, or ía. fol. 39. a. lin. 12. It did seeme unto me. This manner of speech in Spanish, is by the figure *Epitheta*, which is the putting in of a name or syllable in the middle of a word, as in this Parecer me hya, for Parecería me, It did seeme to me.

Dár vna palmada. fol. 39. a. lin. 13. To give one with a pat or blow on the dyest, or else sohere in signe of wounding.

Grangear favores. fol. 39. b. lin. 5. To buy by favours.

Perdido per amores. fol. 39. a. lin. 22. Lost for love, mad in love.

Si fuéssé servido. fol. 39. a. lin. 9. If he pleased, or liked well of.

Vn delirio con que avia dado el alma. fol. 39. a. lin. 27. A swooning or traunce, with which he had given by the ghost.

Pluguiera a Dios. fol. 39. b. lin. 11. Would to God.

Llegár al alma. fol. 39. a. lin. 2. To enter into the soule, to grime at heart.



# Diana de Monte mayor.

77

Tomó la mano de respondéle. fol. 69. a. lin. 9. Took by her to answer her, or stood by before the company to answer her.

Pusieron la mesa. fol. 71. a. lin. 15. They covered the table.

El sol se pone. fol. 71. a. lin. 5. The sunne was set.

Que áya sido parte. fol. 74. a. lin. 20. Which hath bene the cause.

Echárlo en burlas. fol. 76. a. lin. 3. verbatim. To cast it off in jesting, i. To test it out.

A todos hazia ventaja. fol. 76. a. lin. 16. He did exceed all, he did exceed or over pass all.

Rogando muy encarecidamente. fol. 76. b. lin. 8. Requesting very earnestly, very instantly.

Fulana tiene buen áyre, Fulano, es capatçador. fol. 79. a. lin. 23. & 24. Such a one hath a good grace or countenance, such a one is dauncer of a jigge.

Puesto en tanta obligacion. fol. 80. a. lin. 20. Being so much beholding or bound.

Echada a la sombra, Echado a la cama. fol. 81. b. lin. 1. And in the shadow, cast on the bed.

Tuviéssse por bien. fol. 81. b. lin. 8. verbatim. Did hold for good, i. Thought well of, or took in good part.

Mal áya amor, su arco y su saeta. fol. 83. a. lin. 11. The devil take love, his bow and his shaft.

Passallos hiá, or ía. fol. 83. b. lin. 7. I would pass them over. This speech by the figure *Epanthese*, which is a putting betwene of a letter or syllable in the midst of a word, as Passallos hiá, for Passaría los, I would pass them over. Also in Passallos, another figure called *Anisforichen*, which is a twisting one letter for another, by changing R of the Infinitive mood into L, a thing most usual in the Spanish, as here Passallos for Passar los, so Hablállos, for Hablar los, to speake unto them: Vellos, for Ver los, to see them: Dezillos, for Dezir los, to tell them: Oyllos, or Oylos, or Oyr les, or los, to heare them.

Aviendo ydo quanto média legua. fol. 89. a. lin. 21. Having gone about halfe a league.

Se fue su passo a passo. fol. 84. a. lin. 6. Went very soft and leisurely.

Los demas de los dias. fol. 86. b. lin. 2. The rest of the daies.

Y en las manos sendos vasos hechos a la Romana. fol. 90. b. lin. 3. And in their hands each one a severall vessell made after the Romans fashion.

Mesas puestas. fol. 91. a. lin. 21. Tables covered or laid.

Piedras engastadas. fol. 91. b. lin. 1. Stones enchaced.

Alçár, or quírra la mesa. fol. 91. b. lin. 4. To take up the table.

Vistiéron a Felismena, vna ropa y basquiña de fina grana, recamadas de oro de canutillo, y aljófar, vncuéra, y mangas de tela de plata. fol. 94. a. lin. 5. They apparelled Felismena with a gowne and petticoat of fine scarlet colour imbroidered with imboist or raised gold and pearle, a calloske and sleeves of cloth of silver.

Escofión de redezalla. fol. 94. a. lin. 14. A coiffe of net worke.

Las paré des eran labradas de obra Mollica. fol. 94. b. lin. 16. The walls were wrought Jewisly worke or Turke worke, withoute Images.

Duarte. fol. 98. b. lin. 19. Edward.

Miráde bien. fol. 101. a. lin. 1. Behold him well, by the figure *Metathestis*, which is a changing places of letters, for Miráde very common in the Spanish, in the Imperative mood, the second person, plural number, as Leído for Leed lo, Mende por it: Dezido, for Dezid lo, Tell him that: or Dezides for Dezid les, Tell them: so Miráde for Mirád la, Behold her, Mirádas, for Mirád las, Behold them. fol. 103. a. lin. 3.

Ojos verdes y rasgados. fol. 103. a. lin. 28. Faire and great eyes.

Desde el borea al austro. fol. 104. a. lin. 22. From the North to the South.

En quanto se hazia hora de cenár se fueron a vna alameda. fol. 105. a. lin. 16. And while supper time came they went to a grove of poplars.

Mediante la quel. fol. 109. a. lin. 24. By manner whereof.

Genel hombre y bien tallado. fol. 110. a. lin. 13. A proper man and well shaped, and not for as English men call Gentleman.

Cavalle rúcio rodado. fol. 110. a. lin. 17. A horse dapple gray.

Traya en la cinta va alance. fol. 110. a. lin. 19. He carried at his girdle a Turke sword.

Traya en el bráço ysqüierda. fol. 110. a. lin. 24. He carried on his left arme.

Bolvér sobre sí. fol. 110. b. lin. 21. To come to ones self as out of a trance, astonishment, or the like.

Tocár un cuerno. fol. 111. a. lin. 16. verbatim. To touch, i. To sound a borne.

Llevar el camino de los companiões. fol. 111. a. lin. 19. verbatim. To carrie the way of his fellows, i. To take the same way, to be served with the same sauce, to drinke of the same cup.

Tuvo lo en mucho. fol. 113. a. lin. 9. He much esteemed it.

De ay algunos dias. fol. 116. a. lin. 18. A few daies.

Tenérme campo. fol. 119. a. lin. 5. verbatim. To hold me field, i. To be able to stand with me, or fight with me.

Hazer campo. verbatim. To make field, i. To combat, to fight.

No se lo que hará de mí. fol. 119. a. lin. 18. I know not what shall become of me.

Tened



Ambas a dos, fol. 126, b. lin. 27. Both.

Por lo poco que se dava por el. fol. 133. a. lin. 33. *For the little esteem he made of him.*

No se me da náda, *verbatim*. It gives nothing to me, i. I care not.

Avrà como cinco o seys meſes. fol. 147. a. l. 3. Ye shall be some time or other moneth.

Cosa en que tan poco te yva. fol. 149. a. lln. 19. A thing which so little did impose thee.

Me a dádó de mano, fol. 150, a, lin. 26. ~~Me hath taken his leave of me.~~

Fálda de unas montañas. fol. 157. b. lin. 13. *verbatim*. The shirt, i. The use or hanging of an bill.

Vino a dár en un bosque muy grande, de verdes alisos y azebúches afix poblado, fol. 178. a. lms. a.  
He came to light into a wood very great, sufficiently boord with greene Willowes and wilde  
Olives.

Y de súbito fue a dár con los ojos en una muy hermosa ciudad, que desde de lo alto de una sierra, que de frente estaba. fol. 158. a. lin. 6. And upon a suddaine he espyed a faire Citie from the top of a mountaine, which was right against them.

Se fue su pallo a pallo por una senda que junto al río y va házia la parte. fol. 158 b. lin. 6. *He went  
fairs and soft in a path which lead near the river toward that part, &c.*

Sobre las cabeças, tenían fendas guirnaldas de verde yedra. fol. 158. b. lin. 18. Upon their heads they had each of them severall garlands of greene Iule.

Con cierto deldén y un dár de mano. fol. 160. a. lin. 13. With a certain disdain and putting from both the hand.

Dize pues que su muger es finada que me case con el? fol. 160. a. lin. 24. **S**ayth he, seeing thys  
his wyfe is dead, that I marrie with him?

Paréd en médio bivar. fol. 190. b. lin. 18. No line at the next wall, but one wall between.

Parár mientes. fol. 193. a. lin. 21. To marks, to heed.

Plazér acabádo, fol. 226, r. lin. 12. Complete, o3 full toy o3 pleasure quite enden.

**Diana de Monte Mayor 2. part.**

**Encaminar obras a personas de lustre. fol. 2, a. lin. 7. To direct swagkes to persons of fame.**

Si Dios fuere servido. fol. 2. b. lin. 7. verbat. If God shall be served, i. If it shall please God.

De mi grádo jamas entenderia fino en loo loores, *fil. 3. a. lin. 7.* By my god will I would  
better doe any thing else but praise you.

Vaya fuera toda arrogancia. /ol. 3. b. liii. 12. III pñde fue alide.

Como a cada uno compila. fol. 7. a. lin. 2. *Is was me for every one.*

No les comple yrse. fol. 7. b. lin. 30. **It is not what they goe.**

Con el fin del matrimonio. fol. 8. a. lin. 26. *Notis the following to the minister year at marriage.*

Vámonos, fol. 10. a. lin. 10. Let do gos, foy Vámonos nos.

Dexémonos, fol. 19. a. lin. 12. Et de l'ours, fol. Dexémonos.

Amatâr la sed. fol. 10. a. lin. 22. To gârnch cîrîr.

Por una cuenta abaxo. fol. 11. b. lín. 11. Downhill.

A vézes. fol. 31. a. lin. 1. 23<sup>y</sup> turns, by 64.

O vala me Dios, fol. 22, r. lin. 6. God help me.

Pluguiera a Dios. fol. 32. r. lin. 17. ¶ Would to God.

Dado que, fol. 22. v. lin. 27. Grant that, suppose that.

Merced señalada. fol. 28, b. lin. 26. **3** notable conjetura.

El rayador del Cupido. fol. 16. b. lin. proxima. The traitor Cupid.

Tener en mucho. fol. 38. b. lin. 1. *Co effereus muchy et.*

**Words, Phrases, Sentences and Proverbs, out of Coleridge in 8.**

Printed at Antwerp En la oficina Plantiniana.

1595

**Demonstr. 1. line 5. Dust and above, bottom, and above.**

Recibido tienen, pag. 3, l. 6. verbis: **Chy** **no** **recien**, i **Chy** **no** **recien**.

Tener la firma del autor, pag. 4. No. 12. *Colonia de Trujillo* número 12.

Leedo, pag. 8, lin. 9. Reads it by the German MSS., which is a changing of places of letters, very common in the Spanish. In the French MSS. several of the superfluous *m* and *n* are omitted. Thus Leedo for Leedo, no Castigaldo, Castigaldo, no, no Castigaldo, Pedido, require of him, for Pedido, Oydo, hears him, for Oydo.

A não correr de vós da luz, pag. 10, de 11, verbas 10113 all running away you ought to  
more, i. 10113 all haste possible to run as fast.

En quien quépa esta diferencia. pag. 17. lin. 14. In whom may be contained or found this difference.

Conseja tras de fuego. pag. 13. lin. 3. I tale by the fire side, an old wities tale.

Ofrecido tener. pag. 22. lin. 13. verbatim. To hold offered, i. To haue offered.

Vete, vete de ay. pag. 23. lin. 18. Get thee hence, get thee hence.

Abatióse el girafate. pag. 23. lin. 28. The Gerfaulcon bowed.

Los Diablos te gánen. pag. 24. lin. 1. The Demill eate thee.

Que cosa es? pag. 24. lin. 20. What is the matter?

Dexarle he? pag. 25. lin. 2. Shall I leaue him?

Matarse ha. pag. 25. lin. 3. He is to kill himselfe, or he will kill himselfe.

Desbráve, Madúre. pag. 25. lin. 15. Let him pacifie or calme himselfe, let him ripen or come to a head.

Si delante me tiéne. pag. 25. lin. 22. If he haue me before him.

Mudar el pelo malo. pag. 25. lin. 29. To change ill fortune.

Ves lo aquí. pag. 26. lin. 15. See it here.

De la aparéncia a la existéncia. pag. 27. lin. 14. From that which seemes to be, to that which is indeed.

No cabe en coraçon de mi ámo. pag. 28. lin. 6. It is not within the compasse of my masters heart.

Que por la boca le sale a borbollónes. pag. 28. lin. 6. But that it must bubble out of his mouth.

Ha, ha, ha, & Hi, hi, hi. pag. 28. lin. 14. Voices of laughing.

Alisár tíros. pag. 28. lin. 17. To aime.

Escozióte. pag. 30. lin. 27. He toucht you, it made you smart.

Metér por los agujeros. pag. 32. lin. 25. verbatim. To put into holes, i. to take in at windows.

Desque se descubren. pag. 33. lin. 12. From the time they discover themselves.

Carívo de mí, Melquino de mí. pag. 34. lin. 20. Wierch that I am.

Assi me medre Dios, Assi te medre Dios. pag. 34. lin. 23. verbatim. So God make me thysie, i. So God helpe me or prosper me.

Duelos tenémos. pag. 34. lin. 28. We haue mournings in hand.

Ojos verdes y rasgados. pag. 35. lin. 14. Fairs and great eyes.

La tez liza y lustrosa. pag. 35. lin. 24. The skin smooth and clere.

Buen ándo haze esto. pag. 37. lin. 8. This maketh good going forward.

Dias grandes ha, & Muchos dias ha. pag. 37. lin. 11. A good while since.

Quede Dios con v. m. pag. 37. lin. 29. God be with you, or God remains with you.

Dios vaya con v. m. pag. 37. lin. 29. God conuict, or be your spend.

Vaya v. m. con Dios. God in Gods name.

Que es del? pag. 38. lin. 15. What is become of him? where is he?

Hi, hi, hi. pag. 39. lin. 2. A voice of laughing.

Tres dias ha. pag. 39. lin. 4. He hath bene thys daies.

Vo, foz Voy. pag. 39. lin. 12. I goe.

Por mi vida, Por tu vida. pag. 39. lin. 27. I pray thee heartily.

Quedate a Dios. pag. 40. lin. 11. God remaine with you, or hope you.

Sey, foz Se tu. pag. 40. lin. 21. Be thou.

No pude desfiar bien, de que no te cupiése parte. pag. 41. lin. 1. I could not so much as desire, as with any goodnesse, in which thy part was not contained therein.

Si quiera, foz Solamente. pag. 41. lin. 4.

Celo prometi. pag. 41. lin. 28. I promised him it or that, foz Se lo prometí.

Tha, tha, tha. pag. 42. lin. 3. The noise of beating of the knocking at a doore.

O que comedor de huéspedes asados. pag. 43. lin. 21. Oh what a eater of roasted Egges.

De que le servias? pag. 44. lin. 4. In what place or office didst thou serue her in?

Curar de punto. pag. 47. lin. 18. To heale or cure with stitching vp, as with needle & thred.

Téngore lo en gracia, & merced. pag. 48. lin. 24. I thanke thee for it.

Como quiera. pag. 49. lin. 29. As thou pleasest.

Dar en el fiel. pag. 51. lin. 4. To hit the pyche at shooting.

Para mi santiguada. pag. 51. lin. 13. By my halldome.

Do vino el alno, verná el albarda. pag. 51. lin. 23. verbatim. Where the asse is come, the packe saddle will come, i. Where the greener doch yow, the lesse must of necessitie come after.

**A** Frer I had read ouer *Diana de Monte mayor*, and other authors, gathering out the hardest speeches, and explaining them for the learners vse, and being come thus farre in *Celestina*, as you see, it came into my imagination, that running thorow him, and such other hard Authors, by vnsolding so open to euery ones view



view the difficultest points in the tongue, might breed some dislike in men of mine own profession (to whom I wish as to my selfe) as also little thankfulness of others, who hauing their turnes serued, doe commonly verifie this prouerbe, (Eaten bread is forgotten.) I thought good not to deale all at once, but to keepe some to sweeten their mouthes hereafter, as they shall be desirous hereof, and the rather, for that notwithstanding all this and more paines to, with cost out of my purse, neglecting my profession and liuing, I haue already before I came neere the presse, tasted and had some experience of some of the greater sort (if wealth and place haue that prerogatiue) which neuer saw any thing of my doing in their life, or heard mee speake, by discourteous dealing enough to discourage mee from the publishing of any thing, to pleasure or profit many; yet for the better minded, and more courteous disposed, I here goe so farre with the Englishing hereof, and some Prouerbes following, whose curtesie if friendly I finde, may cause me to the farther unfolding of this language to his farther content.

Words, Phrases, Sentences and Prouerbs, out of *La vida de Lázaro de Tormes*, in 8. Printed in Answerp En la oficina Plantimiana,  
Anno M. D. XCV.

Lo que uno no come, otro se pierde por ello. pag. 2. lin. 13. That which one eateth not, another is lost for it, or longeth after it.

No ser mas santo que mis vezinos. pag. 3. lin. 7. Not to be more holy then my neighbours.

Achacaron a mi padre ciertas sangrias mal hechas en los costales. pag. 7. lin. 18. They laid to my fathers charge certaine ripping the sides of the father.

Arrimar a los buenos. pag. 8. lin. 7. pag. 91. lin. 2. To leane or lay ones self upon the good.

Echar la soga tras el caldero. pag. 10. lin. 12. verbatim. To cast the rope after the caldron, i. To cast the heine after the butcher.

Vale te por ti. pag. 11. lin. 16. verbatim. Be of maile for thy selfe, i. Shift for thy selfe.

Par de una cosa. pag. 11. lin. 25. Just even with any thing.

Mas da el duro que el desnudo. pag. 19. lin. 25. verbatim. More giueth the hard then the naked, i. More giueth the miser of curmudgeon, then he that hath it not to give.

Escapé del trueno y di en el Relampago. pag. 28. lin. 23. I escaped the thunder and fell into the lightning.

No poder tener en las piernas. pag. 30. lin. 23. Not to be able to stand upon the legs.

Dar el reloj la una, Dar las dos, las tres, &c. pag. 49. lin. 15. To cleck to strike one, two or thre.

Ha dado la una, Han dado las dos, las tres, &c. pag. 50. lin. 25. It hath strucke one a clecke, two a clecke, thre a clecke.

En un credo. pag. 57. lin. 14. In the twinkling of an eye.

Uña de vaca. pag. 62. lin. 1. A wanton fitt.

La bolsa sin maldita la blanca. pag. 65. lin. 16. The bousil a penny in his purse.

Oy dia. pag. 65. lin. 24. At this day.

Quebrémos el ojo al Diabolo. pag. 66. lin. 7. Let us break the necke of the Devil.

Voto o boto a Dios. pag. 70. lin. 4. I sweare by God.

Del rey abaxo. pag. 71. lin. 6. From the King downward.

Romper capotas. pag. 77. lin. 13. To loose ones breech.

Lanzar del el demonio. pag. 85. lin. 8. To cast out the Devil from him.

Matar con un hombre. pag. 92. lin. 6. To fight with a man.

Quien bien te hará o se yrá o se morirá. pag. 94. lin. 7. He that shall or will do thee a good turne, either he will be gone, or he will die.

Words, Phrases, Sentences and Prouerbs, out of *Mespris de la Corte*,  
or in French *Mespris de la Cour* in 16. Printed An. M. D. XCI.  
per Iehan de Tournai.

Yr me a mi a la mano. pag. 70. lin. 19. verbatim. To goe me to my hand, i. To hinder, let or stop my selfe.

Ir por el arja. pag. 93. lin. 12. To goe the harts way.

Dar de mano a la corte. pag. 127. lin. 20. To shake hands or take leane of the Court.)

Dar



Dár la corte a Dios. pag. 137. lin. 10. *To bid the Court farewell.*  
 Andar en cuérpo. pag. 197. lin. 1. *To goe in hole and doubtie without a cloake.*  
 No es de passár entre renglones. pag. 200. lin. 20. *It is not to be left obscurely, or it is to be plainly written or set downe.*  
 Verdura para la olla. pag. 202. lin. 19. *Herbes for the pot, pot-herbs.*  
 Bevé de buzes. pag. 209. lin. 5. *To drinke as an oxe, or such beast.*  
 Jugár al herrón. pag. 227. lin. 23. *To play at coits.*  
 Corré vn toro. pag. 228. lin. 3. *To bait a Bull.*  
 Aparé y medio, pared en medio. com. Plauto. fol. 4. b. lin. 18. pag. 234. lin. 13. *The next wall to one, or a wall betwene.*  
 Clérigo sin breuário. pag. 259. lin. 8. *I Priest without a brenarie.*  
 Ruár calles. pag. 273. lin. 14. *To gad about the streets.*  
 A p'naa. pag. 289. lin. 20. *Hardly.*  
 Embocar la bola al juego de argolla. pag. 360. lin. 2. *To cast the bowle into the hole of the ring at that play of Argolla, i. Ring.*  
 Tirar coecs. pag. 380. lin. 10. *To hithe.*  
 Traer de tema la gorra. pag. 388. lin. 22. *To set his hat to the good aleward, on one side the head.*  
 Sospecho que son pocos, y muy pocos, y aun muy poquitos y muy repoquitos. pag. 406. lin. 1. *I suspect there are few and very few, yea most few, yea fewest of all.*

Words, Phrases, Sentences, and Prouerbs, out of *Floresta Española*, in 16. Printed in Salamanca, 1592.

Estoy maravillado. *Epist. dedicatoria. pag. 2. lin. 9. I wonder, I maruaile.*  
 El linage donde no avia corona, nunca medrava. fol. 6. b. lin. 4. *verbatim. That kindred that had had a crowne in it never encreased, i. I Priest.*  
 Mas parece chichón, que Cardinál. fol. 7. b. lin. 1. *It seemed rather a welke or pusle then a stripe blacke and blew.*  
 Rezias cámaras. fol. 11. a. lin. 18. *Strong stowings.*  
 Macho de filla. fol. 13. a. lin. 15. *I nagge.*  
 Vn hombre de gran memoria sin letras, tiene rueca y huso y no estambre. fol. 27. a. lin. 1. *A man of great memorie without learning, hath a roche and a spindle, and no flusse to spin.*  
 Bolár vna grulla o ave. fol. 43. b. lin. 5. *To tin as the heron.*  
 Guisár la comida. fol. 43. b. lin. 6. *To brylle meat.*  
 Desensillar. fol. 53. b. lin. 19. *To put out of a chaire. Also to unsaddle.*  
 Vnos moscos de espuelas. fol. 60. b. lin. 1. *Knaches or foot-men.*  
 A esse Page o capalde o encapalde. fol. 61. b. lin. 18. *Either gild this Page or gild a cloake.*  
 Tal cádrede vaca. fol. 74. b. lin. 2. *Such a chaire was vacant.*  
 Llamo me. fol. 76. a. lin. 15. *I call my selfe, or I am called.*  
 Puntos de capácos. fol. 85. b. lin. 14. *The latches of shoes, or lye of shoes, as nines, tens, &c.*  
 Al freyr lo veréya. fol. 93. a. lin. penultimo, *verbatim. By trying you shall see, i. By prooe you shall finde.*  
 Os demande la palabra. fol. 94. b. lin. 2. *Let him challenge your word or promise.*  
 Hazér quartos. fol. 90. a. lin. 3. *To quarter.*  
 Parár mientes. fol. 100. a. lin. 7. *To marhe.*  
 Caldo. fol. 102. b. lin. 5. *Broth, pottage.*  
 Hazér la barba. fol. 112. a. lin. 16. *To trim the beard.*  
 De buena gana. fol. 126. b. lin. 5. *With a good will.*  
 Deair grácias. fol. 134. a. lin. 18. *To speake merry conceits.*

Marco Aurelio.

Sublimár, abatir. pag. 11. lin. 18. *To lift up and to abate.*  
 A ley de buenos juras. pag. 27. lin. 22. *By the faith of a good man I sweare.*  
 Conviene a saber. pag. 42. lin. 16. *That is to wit.*  
 Sobrepujár. pag. 46. lin. 11. *To overpasse.*  
 Pendón de taverna. pag. 51. lin. 9. *The signe of a Tanerrie.*  
 Jugár al axedrés. pag. 59. lin. 20. *To play at Chess.*  
 Poner obligación. pag. 124. lin. 22. *To bind, to make one beholding to him.*  
 Poner el águila en los pechos. pag. 245. lin. 20. *To put the Eagle on his breast, i. To weare the Emperours Armes the Eagle.*

Armár çancadilla. pag. 256. lin. 2. *To trip.*

Cavallo de axedrèz. pag. 279. lin. 26. *The Knight at Chess.*

**De Comédia de Plauto Milite glorioso in 16. printed  
at Antwerp. M. D. LV.**

Fletár vna náo. fol. 8. b. lin. 19. *To hire a ship and pay passage money.*

Hazér a lo largo en la mar. fol. 8. b. lin. 23. *To tanch into the maine at sea.*

Dios te pague. fol. 12. a. lin. 11. *God reward thee.*

Ponér o3 Hazer lumbre. fol. 17. a. lin. 23. *To make a fire.*

El puerco muerto sabe mas quando se come. fol. 22. a. lin. 25. *A dead hog tasteth best when he is eaten.*

Hermáno del leche. fol. 25. b. lin. 17. *A foster brother.*

Poco me doy por esso. fol. 28. b. lin. 19. *A little care I for this.*

Ordír tramas. fol. 29. b. lin. 8. *verbatim. To spin webs, i. To wophe deceits.*

**Comédia de Plauto Menechmos, in 16. bound with  
Milite glorioso.**

Para que se ténga en mas. fol. 54. b. lin. 16. *That he o3 it may be moze esteemed,*

Ambos a dos mancebos. fol. 55. b. lin. 15. *Both the young men.*

No perdáys palabra. fol. 56. b. lin. 10. *verbatim. Doe not lose a word, i. Be attentive to that one shall say.*

Hazér de nueuas con alguno. fol. 67. a. lin. 19. *To make himselfe strange with one, when he knoweth him well enough.*

**Arucana in 16. three in one volume, printed in  
Antwerp. 1597.**

Cúchilla de la montaña. Elógio. pag. 3. lin. 8. *The edge or ridge of a hill.*

Rociáda dar. Elógio. pag. 3. lin. 12. *To give a holley of shot.*

Como consta por sus obras. Elógio. pag. 7. lin. 5. *As appeareth by his works.*

Medir la pica al enemigo. fol. 3. b. lin. 33. *To come to push of a pike with the enemy.*

Poblados penáchos. fol. 4. a. lin. 32. *Chiche plumes of feathers.*

Hazérse a lo largo. fol. 13. a. lin. 10. *verbatim. To make himselfe awake, i. To step out as men in a quarrell to draw their weapon.*

A rienda suelta. fol. 31. b. lin. penult. *verbatim. With a loose raine of a bydle, i. at libertie, freely, as Rey: a rienda suelta. To laugh freely, at libertie.*

I would goe forword in this course of seeking hard places and phrases in Authors, but for that I have now much other business that more concerns me, onely certaine Proverbs which I have heretofore for mine owne use gathered, and here leane some of them to your use, as ye shall best like them.

**Refranes.**

**Proverbs.**

*First setting downe the English word for word according to the Spanish with this word Verbatim. Afterward if it haue a sense differing from the word, the meaning thus, i. for id est: that is to say.*

**N**O puede ser mas negro el cuervo que sus alas. *verbatim. The Crow cannot be blacker then his wings, i. Nothing can exceed the highest degree.*

Quien a su enemigo pops, a sus manos muere. *verbatim. Who former dishonourably dallies with his enemy, dies by his owne hand, i. by making no reckoning of his enemy, receiues damage.*

Quien come y dexa, dos vezes pone la mesa. *verbatim. Who dineth and leaueh for another time, couers the table twice, i. He that happen to sleepe, turneth his turne when he hath waked.*

Gran sabór es comer y no escotar. *verbatim. It is great pleasure to dine as one, and not to pay any shot or reckoning, i. Good thinking of wine of another mans purse.*



- La codicela rompe el saco. *verbatim.* Constantine's burthen the bagge, i. Heer thinketh it full till it breake.
- Mas vñen quatro ojos que no dos. *verbatim.* Four eyes is better then two, i. Two heads are better then one.
- Mas vale páxaro en mano que bueyre bolando. *verbatim.* Better a Bird in hand then a Culture flying, i. A Bird in hand worth ten in the bush.
- Entre hermanos, no metas tus manos: Porque, quien los desparte, lleva la peor parte. *verbatim.* Between brothers put not thou thy hands; for who so severs them hath the worst of it.
- Ni de eslopa buen camila, ni de puta buena amiga. *verbatim.* Neither of hurds is made a good shirt, nor of a queane a good lover.
- Quien ha oficio ha beneficio. *verbatim.* He that hath an occupation or office, hath a benefit and a benefice.
- En la boca cerrada no entra mosca. *verbatim.* In a closed up mouth a fly cannot get in.
- Mas cerca es en mis dientes que mis peñentes. *verbatim.* My teeth are nearer to me then my hindered, i. Nearer is my coat, but nearer is my shirt.
- Mas vale ser cabeza de Raton, que cola de León. *verbatim.* Better to be the head of a Mouse then the tale of a Lion, i. Better to chiefe in a meane place, then vnderling in a greater.
- Da Dios hávas, a quien no tiene quixadas. *verbatim.* God giveth beames to them that have no lawes to cut them, i. God sende fowles forrude.
- A cavallo comedor cabestro corto. *verbatim.* To a greedy eating horse, a short halter, i. To a prodigall man meane fortune: a curst cow short homes.
- Dime con quien andas, y dezirte he quien eres. *verbatim.* Tell me with whom thou goest, and I will tell thee what thou art, i. Birds of a feather will flocke together, like will to like.
- En la boca del discreto, Lo público es secreto. *verbatim.* In the wise mans mouth, that is manifest is kept secret.
- Piedra movédiza, no cria moho. *verbatim.* The rolling stone engenders no moffe.
- Mas vale saber, que aver. *verbatim.* It is better to have knowledge then riches.
- Quien mal en horna, saca los panes vuertos. *verbatim.* He that ferreth in the bread in the oven unghetty, bryneth out the loaves crushed awry: as one brewes, so let him dunke: as one pletes so it pletes.
- Quien da presto, da dos véces. *verbatim.* He that gives quickly, giueth twice.
- Miedo guarda viña y no viñadero. *verbatim.* Feare keepeth and looketh to the vineyard, and not the owner, i. Feare makes one loke about.
- A muertos y a vivos no ay amigos. *verbatim.* To dead men and abient there are no friends left, i. One of sight one of munde.
- La cola de la yegua no bueta mal al pórrro. *verbatim.* The kiche of the mare hurteth not the colt, i. A friends reproch never doth ill.
- A un traydor dos elevólos. *verbatim.* To one traitor, two traitors, i. To one-crach one craftie knave, set two craftie knaves to him and they will cony-catch him. The Italian saith, *A un fido, un fido e meyo.*
- Jurado ha el vaho de negro, no hazer blanco. *verbatim.* The bath of the Blackwoze hath swozne not to whiten, i. That which is dyed in the bone, will never out of the flesh.
- En casa del mesquino, manda mas la muger que el marido. *verbatim.* In the house of the simple soule, the wife commandes more then the husband, i. In the house of the silly man of necessity and of foize, The gray mare will still pouse the better horse.
- Es mas el ruido, que las nueces. *verbatim.* The noise is greater then the nuts, i. More afraid then hurt.
- Dos pardales en vna espiga, hazen rialaliga. *verbatim.* Two sparrowes on one eare of cozne, make an ill agreement, i. Two Competitors cannot accord.
- No es tan bravo el León como le pintan. *verbatim.* The Lion is not so fierce as they paint him, i. He is such a one as he makes show of.
- En hora buena noche, quien buesa fama cobra. *verbatim.* He is boyne in a good houre that gets him a kisse a good name, i. A good name is better then riches.
- De baxo de mala capa, yaze buen bevedor. *verbatim.* Under a bad cloake lies a good drinker, i. The drunk outwittingly covered, the better inwardly lined.
- De rabo de puerro, nunca buen yrdon. *verbatim.* Of a pigs tale you can never make a good shaft, i. Woe a foily in a mozer, you cannot make him leave his folly: a Clowne will never be made a King.
- Que es este hidalgo? El que hán las obras. *verbatim.* What is this Gentleman, i. Who is to bee a Gentleman? Que es este? He that hath the woyses of a Gentleman.
- El asno sufre la carga, no la sobre carga. *verbatim.* The Ass endureth his burden, but not more then his burden.
- Amenezados pán comen. *verbatim.* Threatned men eat bread, i. The threatened men live long.



- Piensa el ladrón, que todos son de su condición. *verbatim.* The thief thinketh that all are of his condition, i. Every one judgeth another by himselfe.
- Mas vale vn tóma que dos te dará. *verbatim.* One hold is better then two I will giue thee. Once giuing is better then often promising.
- No se gana camóra en vn hora. *verbatim.* camóra (a strong towne) is not swome in an houre, i. Rome was not built in a day.
- Quién tiempo tiene, y tiempo atiende, tiempo viene, que se arrepiente. *verbatim.* He that hath time, and looketh for better time, Time comes that he repent himselfe of time.
- Buén corazón quebranta mala ventura. *verbatim.* A good heart breaketh ill hap, i. A good heart ouercommeth all.
- Mundo redondo quien no sabe nadár va se en hondo. *verbatim.* Round world, he that cannot swim, let him sink to the bottome.
- Malas son las burlas verdaderas. *verbatim.* True jests are ill, i. It is ill to jest at that which was done in deed.
- Quién te háze fiésa, que no lo suele hazér, o te quiere engañar, o te ha menester. *verbatim.* Who so maketh much of thee that was not wont, either will deceiue or stande in need of thee.
- Quién a sôlas come el gállo, a sôlas ensilla su caválo. *verbatim.* Whosoever eateth the Cocke alone, saddles the horse alone, i. He that will keep his meat and his money to himselfe, must do his businesse himselfe.
- Ház bien y no cates a quién, haz mal y guárte. *verbatim.* Doe good and regard not to whom, doe euill and take heed of thy selfe.
- Quién a buen árbol se arrima buena sombra le cobija. *verbatim.* Whosoever leaneth on a good tree, getteth a good shadow, i. Whosoever hath a sure man to trust vnto, hath a great pleasure.
- Quien no parece peréce. *verbatim.* Who appeareth not, perissheth, i. Out of sight, out of minde.
- Biva conmigo y búscame quien te mantenga. *verbatim.* Live with me, and seek some other that may maintaine thee, i. Doe me seruice, and get maintenance where thou canst.
- Hónra y provecho, no caben en vn saco. *verbatim.* Honour and profit are not contained together in one sacke, i. If you be honourable, you must be illuall and not respect your money.
- Quien quita l'ocasión, quita el pecado. *verbatim.* He that taketh away the occasion, taketh away the offence, i. He that remoueth the allurements, taketh away the sinne.
- La pobreza no es viléza mas inconveniència. *verbatim.* Poverty is no vile of vicious matter, but yet an inconuenience.
- Las quentas en la máno, y el diábulo en el capillo. *verbatim.* The beads in the hand, and the deuill in his capuch or cape of his cloake, i. Good in his mouth, and the deuill in his heart: good words and wicked deeds.
- Palabras y plúmas el viento las léua. *verbatim.* Words and feathers the wind carrieth away, i. words are but wind.
- Ni Sávaro sin sol, ni moça sin amor, ni véjo sin dolor. *verbatim.* Neither shabberth without sunne, nor young wench without loue, nor an old body without griefe of ache.
- Fuego de estopa, *Fire of straw,*  
Amor de puta, *A love of a quaine,*  
Viento del culo, *Wind from the taile,*  
Todo es vno. *All is one.*

De fra de Señor y de alboroto de  
pueblo.  
De locos en lugar estrecho.  
De honra menguada, y gente que no  
tiene nada.  
De moça adeuina, y mugér lati-  
na.  
Guárdate De persona señalada, y de Bióda tres  
vézes casada.  
De lódos al caminar, y de lengua en-  
fermedad.  
De viento que entre per harádo, y  
de enemigo que sea reconciliado.  
De madrastra, el nombre le bá-  
sta.

Of the word of a mightie man  
and the tumult of the people.  
Of mad folke in a narrow place.  
Of crone women, and people  
which haue nothing.  
Of a young wench a prophes-  
tess, and a Latine woman.  
Take heed Of a person much ad, and so to whom  
thrice married.  
Of foule dirtie soles and long  
scholes.  
Of wind that comes in at a hole,  
and of a reconciled enemy.  
Of a stepmother, the very name  
of her sufficeth.

P L E A S A N T  
A N D

Delightfull Dialogues

I N S P A N I S H  
A N D E N G L I S H :

Profitable to the Learner, and  
not vnpleasant to any other Reader.

By *John Minsheu* Professor of Languages in  
L O N D O N.

*Virescit vulnere Virtus.*



Printed at London by I O H N H A V I L A N D for  
*George Latham.* 1623.

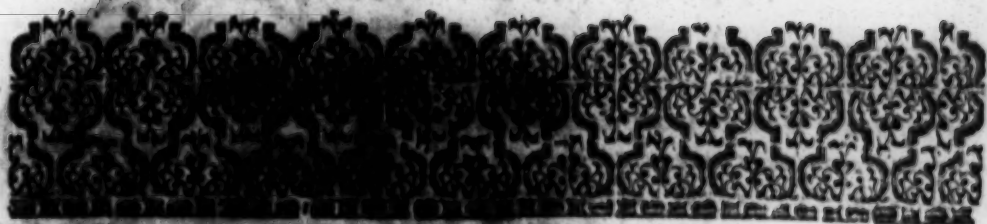


PLEASANT  
AND  
DELIGHTFUL  
IN SPAIN  
AND ENGLAND

Proper to the Learner, and  
proper to the Reader  
By John Taylor, Esq. of London  
1700



Printed in London by John HAVILLAND for  
George Ballard. 1700.



*Al muy illustre Señor, Don Eduardo Hobby :  
su aficionado servidor Juan Minshew  
dese a salud, y perpetua felicidad.*



*Y illustre Señor, de aquel famoso pintor Apeles se  
quenta, que aviendo acabado de pintár una hermosa  
tabla, tendiendola colgada en parte pública, e innumerable  
gente de todas suertes combidada de la lindexa della,  
suspendiéron su curso, y se detuviéron a contemplar-  
la, entre los de mas, se acertó a llegar vn rústico la-  
brador, y como todos alabassen grandemente el ingenio  
del artífice, juntamente con la pintura : el villano,  
con voz ronca y mal compuesta, dixo, una gran falta  
tiene esta tabla ; lo qual como oyesse Apeles, le pre-  
guntó qual fuesse ésta ? El respondió, aquella espiga sobre la qual está aquel páxaro  
sentado, devría ser mas inclinada, porque conforme al peso que presuppone el  
pájaro a la flaqueza de la caña, no podia sustentár le sin doblarse mas, oydo esto por  
el pintor, vió que teniendola el villano, y tomando el pínxel, emendó luego aquel-  
la falta, segund su parecer ; sobórbio pues el rústico con ver que se vviéssse toma-  
do su voto, pasó mas adelante, y dixo, aquellos capatos que aquella figura tiene no  
están buenos, desto le respondió Apeles, Hermano cura de tu arte, y dexa a cada  
uno el suyo. Esta figura, muy illustre señor, he querido traér, por dexir, que si to-  
dos los hombres se conformassen con lo que saben y que su ingenio alcanza, no qui-  
sessen passár adelante, a saber lo que no es de su profesión ny les toca, ny ellos queda-  
rian corridos, como éste villano, ni el labrador se entremeterria a tratár de la guerra,  
ny el mercader de la cavalleria, ny el oficial de las sciencias, ny el herrero se pondría  
a disputar puntos de teología ; Sino que tratando cada vno aquello a que su capacidad  
se aplica, y no mas, seria vn concierto maravilloso, que resultaria en grande vti-  
lidad de toda la república, y para esto devríamos tomar exemplo en las cosas natu-  
rales, las quales perpetuamente guardan su órden y concierto, sin entremeterse las  
unas a hacer el oficio de las otras, y así vemos que ny la tierra calienta, ny el fue-  
go produce, ny el viento riega, ny el agua ventéa, sino que cada cosa tiene su calidád,  
y oficio particular. Pues queriéndose guardar este concierto y órden, a v. m. con-  
viene y convien el jugar de esta mi obra, como aquel que entre todos los demas, tiene  
el primado de la lengua Española, segun la facilidad con que se le a dado, y la perfe-  
cion con que la habla, pero tambien en otras muchas sciencias, y facultades, en que  
v. m. resplandece sobre todos las de nuestro tiempo. Aqui no es de olvidar la resul-  
gente, rara y acabada perfeccion en hermosura, doctrina, lenguas, de la muy illustre  
Señora Doña Margarita su muger de v. m. Dios sabe, si yo quisiera dedicár le toda  
la*



## The Epistle Dedicatory.

la obra entera y no partida en parte, (pues quando no viera las razones dichas para hazerlo; bastava el agradecimiento y benivolencia, que v. m. mostro al que primero emprendió lo que he yo ampliado, y hecho mas copioso: Però el lo dexado de hazer, por los razones a my júyzio; la una es la obligación precisa que tengo a las personas a quien va dirigida, no solo de obediencia y amistad, sino tambien de ayuda, favor, y socorro, que me han dado, para poder llegarla a su fin; y la otra razón es, a verse comenzado, prosseguido, y acatado en su nombre, y para que se apovéchan della, en su ministerio. Però ya que lo que es mayor en cantidad tengo empleado, lo que es yqual en calidad, o fresco y dedico a v. m. y esto mas por lo que a mi importa, pues quedará seguro que los detractores no osen mandar en lo que ha sido censurado por tan primo júyzio y entendimiento, que no por la gloria o utilidad que dello se podra seguir a v. m. ultra de que con esto satisfaga en parte la deuda de agradecimiento, que devo a quien con tanta voluntad se ofrece a mi profesión, officio verdaderamente proprio de hombres sábios y discretos, así como de ignorantes y poco menos que bestias, el impedir semejantes exercicios lo qual ha sido fino en hombres gruessos de entendimiento, y de conciencia, suplico a v. m. que se sirva de recebir esso pequeño servicio, aunque con grande voluntad se ofrece, y poner lo debaxo de su protección y amparo, pues con esto, la obra quedará segura, y en su fin lo estará, de que está bien empleada: y tomaré alas para proseguir en su fin en nombre de v. m. Cuya muy ilustre persona, nuestro señor guarde con acrecentamiento de mayores estados.

Béñase como de v. m. su servidor,

JOHN MINIHAN

D.P. O catibol  
A. Sôor.  
J.B. Quebra-cã  
A. Ligeira, fã de  
J.P. Levando o  
verdade  
A. Amnésia  
E.R. Quebra-cã  
A. Sôor, fã de  
A. Sôor, fã de

A. A. A. A.

A. C. ...  
 A. P. El ...

A. Que...  
d.P. El de r...  
A. Hele aq...  
d.P. Malade... con metr...

65

**Y**Oub, doest thou heare?  
Sir,  
What is it of the clocke?  
It hath struckyn five.  
Rise, and open that window, to see if it  
be day.  
It is not yet breake of the day.  
Why then asshead, why saidst thou that  
it had stricke five a clocke?  
A. Sir, I told you five, but the clocke and  
the morning got not together.

P. Either thou liest, or the clocke lieth, for  
the Sunne cannot lie.  
A. It is better that I lie, then the yeare  
prove me ill.

Q. What weather is it?  
 A. A cloudy weather.  
 Q. Being thus, is it cloudy, for I see  
 the sky clear.

Foot blinde,  
I holdeem shon stande? sleepe  
for

Here comes in such a cold Northerly  
wind at the window, that it bites.

off my nose.  
Give me my clothes, for I will rise.  
Why do you rise so early?

2. *The book will be yet stirring.*  
 3. *It must be profitable for thine owne be-*

Q. What apparel will you wear to day?  
A. That of the five blacks cloth, for it is a confirmation and profitable.

A. What doubtst?

P. That of stiched Satten.

A. Here it is.

P. Blocke head, dost thou bring me my

double



## Diálogos.

es, ántes que la camisa, quíeres  
me morejar de acorádo.

\* Those that be  
whipped, put on  
their doublets in  
haste before their  
shirts, to save  
them from ano-  
ther lash.

A. Aun no ha traydo las camisas la  
labandera.

d.P. Pues, hidepúta y'd por éllas.

A. \* Al Ruyn de Roma, quando le  
nómbra, luego asoma, aquí  
viene ya la labandera.

d.P. Está enxuta?

A. Como vn cuérno.

d.P. Noos he dicho, que no me tray-  
gáys élla compariciones.

A. \* Ello fué, Si fué, v.m. persona  
Sospechosa que no se a de men-  
tar la soga, en casa del ahor-  
cado.

d.P. Dame las calças de terciopélo acu-  
chilladas.

A. Aquí están señor.

d.P. Están limpias? mira bien si tienen  
algun punto fúelto las medias.

A. Élla es vna de las tres cosas que  
Ganafa dezía, que el hombre  
busca con gran cuydado, y  
quando las ha hallado le pesa.

d.P. Y quales son las de mas?

A. Vna suziedad en la cama, y los cuér-  
nios, si su muger se los pone,  
pero éstas sanas están.

d.P. Calcamelas, dame el sayo de ve-  
larte, quel de ríxa es muy de-  
gádo para éste frío que haze.

A. Quiere, v. m. ponérse bon-  
es?

d.P. No sino capáros y panfúos, por  
amor del lódo: Dame primero  
aguamános.

A. Señor el agua está aludada el pe-  
ro.

d.P. Buena señal. A. De que señal d.P.  
de Caránbanos.

A. Y aun de que haze.

d.P. Derrítelo en el brasero, para que  
tanto el espejo y vnas  
ras que quiero adereçar la  
bárva.

A. Aquí está el estúche donde está todo,  
y también el péyne.

d.P. O que de canas tengo, yá me voy  
parándo

## Dialogues.

doublets before my shirt, wilt thou  
scold me as though I had been  
whipped?

A. The Landresse hath not yet brought  
home the shirts.

P. Whoe's sonne's name, go then for them.

A. Lupus est in fabula, as soon as one  
names him, presently he appears,  
here comes the Landresse.

P. Is it dry?

A. As good as a burne.

P. Hast thou told thee, that thou bring  
me no such comparisons?

A. That is true, if ye were a person sus-  
pected, for a man ought not to make  
mention of a halter in the house of  
a man that was hanged.

P. Give me my pair of velvet hose.

A. Here they are Sir.

P. Be they made clean? Look well if the  
fustians have any fusties broken  
in them.

A. This is one of the three things which  
Ganafa said, a man seeks dili-  
gently after, and when he hath  
found them he grieves.

P. And what are the other two?

A. Filth in the bed, and lice in the  
head, if they be of his wife's making,  
though they be of his own.

P. Pull them out, give me that velvet  
black cloth, for which I have paid  
very dear for the last wash-  
ing.

A. Will you wear a burne?

P. No, but please me with a burne of  
the same kind, for I first want to  
wash.

A. The water is all used up.

P. Of

What is it?

P. I have a burne of candles, in the  
house, and I want the looking  
glass to see it, for I will trim  
my hair.

A. Here it is, and all are in it, and  
the burne is gone.

P. O what burne I have, I begin to  
wash.

*Dialogos.*

*Dialogues.*

3

parando véjo.

A. Señor, las navidades no se van en balde.

d.P. Por cierto no tengo muchas, sino  
\* como dizen en mi tierra, cá-  
nas y cuernos no vienen por  
días.

A. Ya está buena ésta agua, bien se pue-  
de vuestra merced lavar.

d.P. Pues dáca la fuente, y la roalla.

A. Quiére, v. m. Llevér capa y gorra o  
herruéllo y sombrero?

d.P. No es aora tiempo de gorra, dame  
el ferruéllo largo, y vn som-  
brero de fieltro.

A. Que espáda? Dorada, plateada o  
Pavonada?

d.P. No la quieró, sino enbarnizada por  
si lloviere, Mira quien llama a  
la puerta.

A. El Señor don Iuan es.

d.P. Corre abre presto.

d.I. Muy buenos dias de Dios, a v. m.  
Señor don Pedro.

d.P. O Señor don Iuan, v. m. se tan bien  
\* venido como los buenos  
años: como está v. m.?

d.I. Muy al servicio de v. m. v. m. está  
bueno?

d.P. Al servicio de v. m. como estuviere,  
aunque algo achacoso.

d.I. Pues porque madruga tanto sino  
anda bueno?

d.P. Porque dizen los médicos que para  
la salud, es bueno levantar de  
mañana.

d.I. Esta salud ténganse la ellos, que pa-  
ra mi éstos son los dias que de-  
vémos merer en casa como dize  
el Refrán, o que los tengamos  
en la cama, dixera mejor.

d.P. Para decir la verdad, yo mas lo há-  
go, por enredar en mis nego-  
cios.

d.I. Como le va v. m. de ellos?

d.P. Señor al servicio de v. m. mal ben-  
dito sea Dios.

d.I. Como así no despáchan v. m.?

d.P. Si Señor despáchan con. Muchacho  
tráe nos de amorzar antes que  
salgamos.

d.I. Ya

was old.

A. Sir, yeares passe not ouer ones head in  
vaine.

P. Truly, I haue not many yeares on my  
backe, but as they say in my Coun-  
try, Hoare baires, and hornes come  
not by age.

A. This water is now well, you may now  
well wash Sir.

P. Then giue here the bason and yewer,  
and the towell.

A. Will you weare a short cloake and cap,  
or long cloake and hat?

P. It is no weather now for a cap, giue me  
a long cloake and a felt hat.

A. What rapier, gilt, filnered, or sangui-  
ned?

P. None, but that varnished rapier, lest it  
should raine: Go looke who knockes  
at the doore.

A. It is master Iohn.

P. Run, open the doore quickly.

I. God giue you good morrow master Pe-  
ter.

P. Oh master Iohn, you are as well wel-  
come as good fortune: how doe you  
Sir?

I. Readie to doe you seruice, and are you  
well Sir?

P. Howsoeuer Sir, at your command, al-  
though now I am not halfe well.

I. Why then doe you rise so early, if you be  
not well?

P. Because Physitians say, that for ones  
health it is good to rise early in the  
morning.

I. That healthlet them haue themselves  
for me, these be the good daies (as  
the Prouerbe saith) which wee  
ought to lock up within our doores,  
nay (I should say) within our beds.

P. To tell you the truth, I doe it chiefly to  
follow my businesse.

I. How goeth it with you in your businesse?

P. Sir at your command, but ill enough God  
be thanked.

I. How, doe they not dispatch you?

P. Yea Sir, they despise me. Boy, giue vs  
somewhat to breakefast before wee  
goe forth.

I. I



- d.I. Ya yo he bevido vna vez.  
 d.P. Beverá. v. m. otra que no le hará mal.  
 d.I. \*No, que no soy tan delicado como judío en viérnes.  
 A. Que quieren vs. ms. almorzár.  
 d.P. Tráe vnos pastéles y vn quartillo de cabrito asládo.  
 d.I. Que bien adereçádo tiene. v. m. éste aposénto señór don P?  
 d.P. Señór Razonable como para vn hidálgo póbrc.  
 d.I. De donde úvo. v. m. ésta tapicería?  
 d.P. Señór; de Flandes vino.  
 d.I. Tambien déven defer de alla los liénçoso pintúras o Retrátos?  
 d.P. Algúnos déllos, otros son de Ytalia.  
 d.I. De gentil máno son por cierto: quanto le costó. a v. m. éste escrítorio?  
 d.P. Mas que vale, quarenta ducádos.  
 d.I. De que madera es?  
 d.P. La colorada es caoba de la Havána y ésta négra es évano, la blánca es marfil.  
 d.I. Cierta que está muy curióso, y muy bien ascentáda la taracea.  
 d.P. Aquí verá. v. m. vn buíte mejor labrádo.  
 d.I. Á donde fue hécho?  
 d.P. El y las sillas viniéron de Salamanca.  
 d.I. Lo mejor le falta a v. m. en este aposénto.  
 d.P. Que es, por vida del Señór don Juan?  
 d.I. Por lo que dezía don Juan Manuel, un sonezéro de chapín.  
 d.P. Ya entiendo, por la mugér lo dize v. m.  
 d.I. Por la misma.  
 d.P. Ami me parece que lo mejor que tiene es estar sin ella.  
 d.I. \*O Señór no diga. v. m. esso que es triste cosa la soledád.  
 d.P. \*A tengo me al que dize, que Vale mas solo que mal acompañádo.

d.I. Pues

- I. I have already eaten a bit.  
 P. One bit more will doe you no harme.  
 I. No, for I am not so curious as the Jew on a Friday.  
 A. What will your Worships breake your fast withall?  
 P. Bring a pie, and a quarter of a roasted Kid.  
 I. Oh how well in order have you this lodging M. Peter?  
 P. Sir reasonable for a poore Gentleman.  
 I. From whence had you this Tapestry hangings?  
 P. Sir it came from Flanders.  
 I. And from thence also came these pictures and portraictures?  
 P. Some of them did, others came from Italy.  
 I. Truly they are of a fine workmans doing. What cost this deske or caxe?  
 P. More than it is worth, fortie duckets.  
 I. Of what wood is it?  
 P. The red is \*Caoba of Havána, and this blacke is Ebonie, and the white is Ivorie.  
 I. Truly it is very curious, and the inlaying of the wood most finely set in.  
 P. Here may you see a standing table, better wrought.  
 I. Where was it made?  
 P. That and the chaires came from Salamanca.  
 I. The best thing is yet wanting in this lodging.  
 P. What is it I pray you heartily Master Iohn?  
 I. That which Don Iohn Mannel said, the gentle sound of a womans shoe.  
 P. Now I understand you means a wife.  
 I. Even the selfe-same.  
 P. It seemes unto me, that the best thing my lodging hath, is to bee without her.  
 I. Oh Sir, say not so, solitarinesse is unpleasant.  
 P. Ah Sir, I stand to that old saying, Better alone than evill accompanied.

I. But

\* Caoba, a fine red wood in the Indies, of which they make checker work, and other curious workes in cupboards, &c.

*Diálogos.*

*Dialogues.*

5

d. I. Pues no se entiende que a de ser mala.  
d. P. Y adónde le hallaremos que sea buena?  
d. I. Muchas ay muy buenas.  
d. P. Es verdad, las que están enterradas.  
d. I. De suerte que quiere. v. m. dezir que la mujer estonçes es buena quando está muerta.  
d. P. Digo Señor que cada loco con su tema, yo he dado a ora en ésta.  
d. I. \* Y sefaldrá. v. m. con ella, como el Rey con sus alcaválas.  
d. P. \* Sedize que una buena mula, y vna buena cabra, y vna buena muger son tres, malas cucas.  
Al. La mesa está puesta bien se pueden sentar. vs. ms. a almorzar.  
d. P. Señor don Iuan tome. vs. ms. aquella cabeçera.  
d. I. Bueno sería, ello es per motejarme de viejo.  
d. P. No, si no por cumplir con la razón.  
d. I. V. m. tome su lugar que yo tomaré el mio.  
d. P. Bueno es que venga a mi casa, quien mande en ella mas que yo.  
d. I. Oñ por ay lo echa. v. m. yo obedesco en su casa y fuera.  
d. P. Yo soy el que tengo de servir como la razon me obliga. Muchacho dáca plaros.  
Al. Aqui estan Señor.  
d. P. De adonde truxiste estos pasteles?  
Al. De la mas limpia pastelera que ay en la ciudad.  
d. P. Son de nuestra vezina la hermosa?  
Al. Si Señor.  
d. P. Bien los puede. v. m. comer sin asco que ne mujer limpia son.  
d. I. Mas que nunca lo fueran, nunca yo miro en misérias.  
d. P. Pues menos mirara, si fueran amigo de ellos como yo.  
d. I. Muy bien me saben, y lo mejor que yo les hallo es ser comida  
tan

I. But you must not understand of a bad wife.  
P. And where shall we finde hir that is good?  
I. There are many very good.  
P. It is true, they which are dead and buried.  
I. So that you will say, that a woman is then good, when she is dead.  
P. I say Sir, that every foole hath his wilfulness, and I have lighted now upon this.  
I. And you shall as easily carrie it away as the \* King doth his subsidies.  
P. It is said, that a good mule, a good goat, and a good woman are three unhappy creatures.  
A. The table is covered, your worships may well sit downe to breakefast.  
P. M. Iohn, sit you downe at the upper end of the table.  
I. It should doe well indeed, that is a flout because I am old.  
P. Not so, but to doe you right.  
I. Take you your place, and I will take mine.  
P. It is verie good, that I should haue such a guest as should command more in my house than my selfe.  
I. Oh Sir if you take it so, I not onely obey you in your house, but abroad also.  
P. Sir I am to be at your seruice, as reason bindeth me. Boy giue mee dishes here.  
A. Heere they are Sir.  
P. From whence didst thou fetch these pies?  
A. From the cleanliest Pie-wife that is in the Citie.  
P. What from our faire neighbour?  
A. Yea Sir.  
P. Well may you eat Sir of them without loathing, for they are from a cleanly woman.  
I. And if they were not, I neuer sticke for small matters.  
P. Lesse would you stand upon it, if you did loue them as I doe.  
I. They please my taste well, and the best is that I alwaies finde them to be a  
U v meat

\* without contentment.



tan acorrida, que a qual quier,  
ora, que el hombre la quiera la  
halla guisada.

d.P. Muchácho da nos de bevér que pí-  
ca la pimienta.

Al. Que quiere, v. m. blanco o tinto?

d.P. Echa de lo blanco, que es mas cali-  
ente para por la mañana.

d.I. Y aun es mas saludable que lo tinto.

d.P. Brindo a v. m. Señor don Iuán.

d.I. Befo, a v. m. las manos, haré la ra-  
zon.

Al. Por qual táca quiere, v. m. bevér,  
por la Llana o por esta hon-  
dilla.

d.I. Alonso amigo, avéis de saber que  
yo soy muy buen borrácho y  
sé muy bien lo que me bévo,  
por esto echaldme por aquella  
taçallana.

d.P. Yo gusto mas de bevér por esta co-  
pa de vidrio que no por ningun-  
a de las taças.

d.I. \* Señor, contra gustos no ay dis-  
puta.

d.P. Ansi es verdad, con esta pierna de  
cabrito beberá, v. m. otra vez,  
y trae vnas acciunas para la  
terçera.

d.I. Esta ya se llamará comida y no al-  
muérzo.

d.P. Porque?

d.I. Porque dizen a buen comer o mal  
comer, tres vezes se a de bevér.

d.P. Ay dize nuestra madre çeestina  
\* que está corrupta la letra que  
por dezir treçe dixo tres.

d.I. Ahora Señor bien está lo hecho, no  
mas que perderémos la gana  
de el comer.

d.P. Den nos a bevér otras sendas de la  
calabriada.

d.I. Adonde yrémos?

d.P. Lo priméro a la yglesia, y enco-  
mendár nos a Dios.

d.I. \* Está muy bien, que por yr a la  
yglesia ni dar çeuada, no se  
pierde jornada.

d.P. çierra

meat so in readinesse, that at what-  
soever houre a man will haue it he  
may finde it ready drest.

P. Boy giue vs drinke, for the Pepper bites.

A. Which will you haue Sir, Sack or \* Tin-  
to?

P. Fill out of the Sacke, for it is more bea-  
ting, chiefly for the morning.

I. And also is more wholesome than the  
red.

P. I drinke to you master Iohn.

I. I thank you Sir, I will pledge you.

A. In which cup will your worship drinke, in  
the plaine bowle, or in the little  
deepe one.

I. Friend Alonso you must know, that I  
am a very good drinker, and know  
how much I use to drinke, where-  
fore fill me that plaine bowle.

P. I like better to drinke out of this drin-  
king Glasse, than out of any other  
of the cups.

I. Sir, against ones liking there is no dis-  
puting.

P. It is so Sir: this legge of Kid will make  
you once againe haue a quarrell to  
the cup. Bring vs some Olines for  
the third course.

I. This is to be called a dinner, and not a  
breakfast.

P. Why?

I. Because to a good meale or a bad,  
three draughts onely are to be had.

P. Alas saith our mother Celestine, the  
letter is corrupted, for whereas he  
should haue said thirteene, he set  
downe three.

I. Well Sir, it sufficeth, we haue eaten well,  
no more, for we shall loose our sto-  
macks to eat at dinner.

P. Let them giue to each of vs once againe  
of the \* Calabriada.

I. Whither shall we goe?

P. First to the Church, to commend our  
selues to God.

I. It is very good, for neither in going to  
the Church, nor in giuing prouen-  
der to thy horse, was there euer  
iourney hindered or lost.

P. Shut

\* Tinto is a wine  
in Spain red and  
black sh.

\* Calabriada:  
a mixed wine,  
half one wine  
and half another

*Dialogos.*

d. P. cierra aquel cofre, pon en cobro  
estas baratijas, llama al áma  
que barra y componga este a-  
posento.

Al. Tengo de yr acompañando a v. m.?

d. P. No, sino quédate en casa, ayúda al  
áma y limpia todos mis vesti-  
dos y ponédla en órden y a las  
once llévame el cavallo a palá-  
cio.

Al. Está muy bien Señor, yo lo haré  
ansi.

d. P. \* Éste mi criado Señor don Juan, es  
como malilla que hago de ello  
que quiero.

d. I. Y aun anda v. m. en lo cierto para  
ser bien servido, que quando  
hombre tiene muchos criados,  
unos por otros nunca házen  
cosa a deréchas.

d. P. El me sirve de mayordómo, de re-  
postero, de maestre sala, de  
guarda ropa, de paje, y de lac-  
yo, y a vézes de dispensero.

d. I. El parece buen hijo.

d. P. Bueno Señor es tan bueno que a ser  
mas, no valiera nada, sola vna  
faltatiene.

d. I. Qual es?

d. P. \* Que es grandísimo enemigo de  
el agua.

d. I. Eso hará lo, por el bien que le sabe  
el vino, pero esta no se puede  
llamar falta, si no sobra.

d. P. Muchácho cierra la puerta, con la  
\* llave, que a puerta cerrada el  
Diablo se buelue.

Al. Ama, tráygá vn caldéro de agua y  
vna escoba, regarémos y barra-  
rémos éste aposento.

Ama. Toma primero esta ropa blanca  
quetrázo la labandera.

Al. Aguarde, sacaré la memoria para  
vér si falta algo.

Am. Adonde la tienes?

Al. Aquí está en mi faltriquera.

Am. Lee la pues.

Al. Memoria de la ropa de mi amo  
que llevó la lavandera en diez  
de marzo de 1599. primera-  
mente, quatro camisas, con sus  
cuellos

*Dialogues.*

7

P. Shut that chest, put up safe this house-  
hold stuffe, call the nurse that shee  
sweepe and dresse this lodging.

A. Shall I waite on you Sir?

P. No, but tarie in the house, helpe the  
nurse, and brush all my apparell, and  
set the house in order, and at ele-  
ven of the clocke bring my horse to  
the Court.

A. Very well Sir, I will doe it.

P. This my servant master Iohn is as the  
"Malilla, for I make of him what  
I will.

I. And thereby you are sure to bee well  
served, for when a man hath many  
servants, one by reason of the other  
never doe that they ought.

P. He serveth me for steward of my house,  
for a keeper of my plate, for a gen-  
tleman-usber, wardrobe-keeper,  
page, and for lacquey, and some-  
times for cater.

I. He seemes to be an honest fellow, a good  
fellow or good servant.

P. Good Sir, so good he is, that if he were  
better, he were worth nothing, one-  
ly one fault he hath.

I. What is that?

P. That he longes no water by no meanes.

I. That is for the good he findes in Wine,  
but this cannot be called a want in  
him, but a superfluitie.

P. Boy, locke the doore with the key, for as  
a locked doore, the diuell himselfe  
goeth his way.

A. Nurse, bring a kettle of water and a  
broome, we will cast water on, and  
sweepe this chamber.

N. Take first this cleane linnen which the  
Laundresse brought home.

A. Stay a little, I will take out the note to  
see if any thing be wanting.

N. Where is it?

A. Heere it is in my pocket.

N. Read it then.

A. A note of my Masters clothes which  
the Laundresse had the tenth of  
March, 1599. First, fower  
shirts, with their russe bands

\* Malilla a card  
agreed upon, that  
be that hath him  
may make of him,  
king, queens,  
knight, etc, nine,  
ten, or what soe-  
ver other card.



cuellos de lechuguilla.

Am. Aquí están. Al. dos sábanas, dos almohadas de cama, dos pares de calzones de lienzo, tres de calcetas.

A. Aquí están.

Al. Vna dozena de pares de escarpines.

Am. No ay a qui mas que ocho.

Al. Pues quatro faltan a la labandera pedirle he que de cuenta dellos, y si ella los perdió que los pague.

Am. Anda, que valen quatro escarpines viejos y rotos?

Al. Yten mas dos escofierasy quatro tocadores, media dozena de pañuelos de narizes.

Am. Aquí está rodo.

Al. Dos mesas de manteles, y diez servilleras.

Am. Aquí están.

Al. Tres toallas, y vn frutero, y dos cueros de encaje con sus puños.

\* Fruit cloth to cover the fruit when it is carried to the table.

Am. Todo está aqui que nada falta.

Al. Pues doblémos lo, y pongámos lo en el arca.

Am. Como me llamáys para que os ayude a ésto, no me llamárades para que os ayudara al almuerzo.

Al. Allí tengo guardados vnos escamochos que sobráran a mi amo.

Am. Quiero primero barrer ésta sala y aderezarla.

Al. Entre tanto limpiaré yo la ropa, save de la escobilla?

Am. Vesta allí colgada de aquel clávo, que si fuera perro ya se uiera mordido.

Al. O quanto polvo tiene esta capa?

Am. Sacude la primero con vna vara.

Al. Ama, más que qien hechos están estos calzones?

Am. Tambien entiendo yo de ésto, como puerca de freno.

Al. Pues que entiendo?

Am. Al lo que a mi me importa si tu pregun-

to them.

N. Heere they are. Al. a paire of sheetes, two pillowes, two paire of linnen breeches next the skin, three paire of linnen hose under the stockings.

N. Heere they are.

A. A dozen paire of socks.

N. There are but eight heere.

A. Then four wants, I will require of the Laundresse that she give account of them, and if she hath lost them that she pay for them.

N. Goe, what are four old broken socks worth?

A. Also more, two night coifes and four night kerchiefs, halfe a dozen of handkerchiefs.

N. Here is all.

A. Two table clothes, and ten table napkins.

N. Here they are.

A. Three towels, and one\* fruit cloth and two ruffe bands wrought with their ruffes at hand.

N. All is here, nothing is wanting.

A. Then let us fold it, and let us put it in the chest.

N. Wherefore call you mee, that I should help you to doe this, and would not call me that I should help you to eat your breakefast?

A. There have I saved certaine fragments which my master left.

N. I will first sweepe this hall and dresse it.

A. In the meane while will I brush the clothes: doe you know where the brush is?

N. See there hangd upon that nail, that if it were a beare it would now have bit ther.

A. Oh what a deale of dust hath this cloke?

N. Beat it out first with a wand.

A. Nurse, how exceeding well are these breeches made.

N. I have as good knowledge therein as a sow in a bridle.

A. What have you knowledge in then?

N. In that which belongeth unto mee, if thou

*Diálogos.*

preguntáras por una basquiña,  
una saya entera, una ropa, un  
manto, o un cuerpo, una gor-  
guera, de una toca, y cosas seme-  
jantes, supiera te yo responder.

- Al. De manera que no sabe leer, mas de  
por el libro de su aldea.  
Am. Quieres tu, que sea yo, como el ym-  
bidióso, que su cuidado es en  
lo que no le va ni le viene.  
Al. Siempre es virtud saver, aunque se-  
an cosas que parece que no nos  
ympórtan.  
Am. Bien sé yo, que tu sabrás hazer una  
bellaquería, y ésta no es virtud.  
Al. El saverla hazer no es malo, el usár-  
la sí.  
Am. \* Siempre oy dezir que quien las  
sábe las tañe.  
Al. \* No sino que quien ha las hechas  
halas sospéchas.  
Am. Pues valláco que he hecho yo?  
Al. No mas de hazerme regañar algunas  
vézes.  
Ama. No me des tu ocasión.  
Al. Estonces muchas merçédes, quan-  
do le doy ocasión, es menester  
que me perdóne, que quando  
no se la doy, poca amistad me  
haze.  
Ama. A ora hermano dexate de retóri-  
cas y has lo que tu amo te man-  
dó.  
Al. Si haré aunque bien créo que no  
por ésto me tengo de asentár  
con el alameñá.  
Ama. A lo menos escusarás de que el no  
te asiente en el rábo.  
Al. Yo voy a ensillar el caválo, a dios  
paredes hasta la buelta.

*Dialogues.*

9

thou hadst asked of a peticoate, a  
womans cassocke, a womans gowne,  
a mantell, a paire of bodies, a gor-  
get, or a womans head attire, and  
like matters, I could have answer-  
red thee.

- A. So then the Priest cannot say Masse  
but in his owne booke.  
N. Wilt thou, that I should be as the enui-  
ous person which setteth his mind  
on that which belongs not unto  
him.  
A. Yet alwaies it is a vertue to know, al-  
though they be things which seeme  
not to appertaine unto vs.  
N. I know well, that thou knowest well how  
to play the knave, and that I am  
sure is no vertue.  
A. To know how to doe it is not euill, but to  
use it, it is euill.  
N. I alwaies haue heard say, he that can  
play, playeth.  
A. No but whosoever is bad, hath suspiti-  
on of another to be bad.  
N. Why knave what haue I done?  
A. Nothing else, but make mee fret and  
vex my selfe sometimes.  
N. Doe not thou giue me occasion?  
A. Then I thanke you hartily, when I giue  
you occasion it is necessarie that  
you pardon mee, that when I giue  
you no occasion, you doe me little  
\* curtesie.  
N. Now Brother, leaue your Rhetoricke,  
and doe that thy M. commanded  
thee.  
A. So will I doe, although I beleene, for all  
that I am, not to sit at table with  
him.  
N. Thou must needs beare with that, for  
that he doth not set it on your bum.  
A. I goe to saddle the horse, farewell wals  
till my returne.

\* Meaning then  
she doth not for-  
giue him any  
thing, seeing he  
maketh no offence  
unto her.



*Diálogo segundo, en el qual, se trata de comprar y vender joyas y otras cosas entre un Hidálgo llamado Thomas, y su muger Margarita, y un Mercader, y un Platero.*

Th. **A** Donde queréis que vamos Señora?

Ma. Vámos a la platería, y compraremos algunas piezas de plata.

Th. Y de allí?

Ma. Yrémos a la lonja para comprar algunas cosas.

Th. En el nombre de Dios, entremos en ésta tienda.

Ma. Plegue a el, sea con pie derecho.

Th. A Señor guarde Dios a v. m.

Pl. Y venga con vuestras mercedes.

Th. Mande nos mostrar, algunas buenas piezas.

Pl. Que géneros quiere v. m. tácas, copas o jirros, fuentes, platos, y escudillas, es lo mas necesario.

Th. Y tambien copas de salvo, y saleros, vinagéras.

Pl. Ola moço, saca aqui toda essa plata de el arca.

Ma. Veamos aquellos candeleros y despaviladéras.

Th. Si estos brazerillos de mésa estuviéran Sincelados fueran mejores.

Pl. Otros dicen, que la sinceladura es allegadero de mierda, hablando con perdón de vuestras mercedes.

Ma. No veo aquí agua manil ninguno.

Pl. Aquí está vno sobre dorado y sincelado con su fuente de la misma labor.

Th. Yo quisiera toda la baxilla de una misma labor que no diferenciáran vnas piezas de otras.

Pl. Por esso dicen, que tantas opiniones ay como cabeças: otros dicen que la variedad es la que agrada.

Th. Es verdad, pero la variedad ha de ser de cosas enteras, y por que hazer vna capa de remiendos, no puede agradar a nadie.

Pl. Con-

*The second Dialogue, wherein is handled to buy and sell Jewels and other things, betweene a Gentleman called Thomas, and his wife Margaret, and a Merchant, and a Goldsmith.*

Th. **W** Hither will you that wee goe Ladie?

Ma. Let us go to the Goldsmiths shops, and we will buy some pieces of plate.

Th. And from thence whither?

Ma. We wil go to the Exchange to buy some things.

Th. In the name of God let us goe into this shop.

Ma. I pray God it be in good time, luckily.

Th. Oh master Goldsmith, God saue you.

Go. And God be in your company.

Th. Canse one to shew us some good peeces.

Go. What kinds will your worships see, plaine cups, deep cups, or pots, awers, plat- ters, or dishes, all these are the most necessarie.

Th. And also cups with coners, and salt- sellers, and bottles for vineger and oyle.

Go. Ho sirra, take out heere all this plate out of this chest.

Ma. Let us see these candlestickes and snuffers.

Th. If those chasindishes for the table were engrauen they were better.

Go. Others say, that the graving is a ga- thering of filth, speaking with reue- rence of your worships.

M. I see no basen here.

G. Here is one gilt oner, and graned with his ewer of the same worke.

T. I would haue all a cupboord of plate all of one worke, that there might not differ one peece from another.

G. Therefore they say, so many men so ma- ny minds, other say varietie breeds delight.

T. It is true, but that varietie is to be of whole entire things by themselves, for to make a cloake with patches can please no bodie.

Go. Agree

Pl. Conçierte se v. m. conmigo en el precio, que yo se la daré acabada dentro de pocas días de la hechura que la quisiere.

Ma. Siempre en las tardanças ay peligro, y vale mas páxaro en mano que bueyre bolando.

Th. Pues eícoja de ay v. m. les pieças que mas le agradären.

Ma. Este salpimentéro y ésta copa con su sobre copá, y éste pichél, y ésta calderéta, y ésta porcelána sean las primeras.

Th. A como hēmos de dár por \* el marco de estas pieças?

Pl. Por el marco de las llanas me ha de dár. v. m. a çien reáles por las sinçeladas, a quinze ducados y por las doradas a treynta ducados.

Th. Si el pedir fuera dár, no se avia hecho mala hazienda oy, pero de \* el dicho a el hécho ay gran trecho.

Pl. Al de menos no lo daré yo por lo, que. v. m. me ha ofrecido hasta agora.

Th. Está tan caro, que yo no sé que le ofrezca si no es vna \* baxa.

Pl. Eísa yo la dançaré despues que. v. m. aya tañido su álta.

Tho. Mi mas alta Señór, es a seis ducados la llána, y a çien reales, la sinçelada, y la dorada, a veinte ducados.

Pl. Muy bien despachádo yva yo, mas me tiēnen ami de cósta.

Th. Pues Señór torne a dançar a vér en que pára.

Pl. En cada género, le quitaré a. v. m. dos ducados y no mas.

Th. Muy mal dançó. v. m. no le tóco mas.

Pl. Pues yo le aseguro a. v. m. que no lo halle mas varáto en la calle.

Th. Calle que si hallare, que donde vna \* puerta se cierra ciento se ábren.

Ma. Si ha de valér mi voto, dezir le he.

Pl. Diga

Go. Agree with me for the price, and I will make it up for you within these few daies, of what fashion you will haue it.

Al. Alwaies delays breed danger, and better a bird in hand then a vulture flying.

T. Then choose you out those peeces which best shall like you.

Al. This salt and pepper box, and this cup with his cover, and this pot made ewer wise, and this kettle of silver, and this broad cup to drinke in are the best.

Th. What are we to pay for the halfe pound of these peeces?

Go. For the halfe pound of these plaine peeces your worship is to giue mee fiftie shillings, for the engraving fiftene ducates, and for the gilt thurtie ducates.

Th. If asking were giuing, you had not made an ill match to day, but there is a great distance betwixt the word and the deed.

Go. At least I will not giue it for that you haue offered me as yet.

Th. You are so deere that I know not what I may offer for it, if there bee no abatement.

Go. That will I dannee, after your worship hath strooke the treble.

Th. My highest is six ducates the plaine, and fiftie shillings the engraving, and the gilt twentie ducates.

Go. This businesse is well dispatched now, they cost me more.

Th. But Sir, come backe and dance againe, to see vpon what you sticke.

Go. In enery kinde of them I will abate two duckets and no more.

Th. You dannee very ill, I play no more.

Go. But I assure your worship that you cannot finde better cheape in the street.

Th. Hold your peace, for I will finde: for where one doore shuts a hundred doe open.

Ma. If my voice may preuaile, Ile strike the stroke.

Go. Let

\* Marco de plata  
is worth xxxvj.  
English beside  
the fashion.

\* A dance so  
called, Also an  
abatement.



Pl. Diga le v.m. que le soy muy devoto.

Ma. Pues otro tanto como baxó el platéro, suba el Señor Tomás y no se hable mas.

Pl. Porque su palabra de v.m. no buelva atrás, &c.

Th. No queria v. m. mas, ora peselo, pesár malo le dé dios a el diablo.

Pl. Lleven lo a casa que allá lo pesarémos.

Th. Móço carga con todo y Lleva lo a casa.

Pl. Han de bolvér se luego vuestras merçedes?

Th. No hasta de aquí a dos oras, que y mos a comprár otras cosas.

Pl. Si v.m. es servido de que le acompañe, hazér lo he.

Ma. Guarde Dios a v. m. que no querémos mas compañía.

Th. En ninguna cosa gasto el dinero, de mejor gana que en plata.

Ma. Lo que se gasta en plata no es gastar, si no trocar pieças chicas por pieças grandes.

Tb., Y tambien por que cabe en ella lo que dizen que no cabe en un saco que es honra y provecho.

Ma. Si, por que si hombre se quiere servir con vidrio o china, o barro, mas cuesta lo que se quiebra entre año que la hechura de la plata.

Th. Y con vna baxilla que hombre compra vna vez, tiene para hijos, niétos, y visniétos.

Ma. Aora vámos a la joyería.

Th. Eise es vn camino que yo hago de muy mala gana.

Ma. Por que razón?

Th. Por que éstas joyas son como las donzéllas, que mientras están encerradas son de mucho valor, y en sacando las fuera, le pierden todo y no valen nada.

Ma. Si però, lo que se vfa no se escúfa.

Th. Al

Go. Let your worship speake on, for I am much devoted.

Ma. Then so much as the Goldsmith hath abated, so much let Master Thomas rise, and let there be no more words.

Go. For that your worships word may bee taken, &c.

Th. You can desire no more, now weigh it, God give ill weight to the dinell.

Go. Carry it to your house, there wee will weigh it.

Th. Sirra, take up all this and carry it home.

Go. Are your Worships to come backe againe this way by and by?

Th. Not till within this two houres, for we goe to buy other things.

Go. If it please you that I goe with you, I will.

Ma. God keepe you, we will no more company.

Th. In nothing I spend money with a better will than in plate.

Ma. That which is laid out in plate is not wasted, but to change small peeces for great peeces.

Th. And also there is contained in it that they say is not contained in a sacke, which is \* honour and profit.

Ma. Yea, for if a man will serve his turne with glasse, or \* China mettall, or earth, that which is broken thereof, costs more in a yeare than the fashion of the plate.

Th. And for a cupboord that a man buyeth once, he is furnished for his children, nephewes, and nephewes children.

Ma. Now let us goe to the place where they sell Jewels.

Th. This is a way that I goe unwillingly.

Ma. What is the reason?

Th. Because these Jewels are as maidens, that while they are maids and kept in, they are of much value, and in taking them abroad they loose all, and are worth nothing.

Ma. Yea, but that which is a custome cannot be shunned, custome needs no excuse.

Th. But

\* Honour and profit is not held together in one bag. i. the fine dishes of earth painted such as are brought from Venice.

Th. Al mal uso quebrar le la pierna.

Th. But it is good to break the legges of an ill custome.

Ma. No queráis señor poner vos puertas a el campo ni corregir el mundo, que así le hallásteis y así le habéis de dexar.

Ma. I would not haue you Sir \* make doores \* i. to doe things for the fields, and correct the whole imp. gill. c. world: for so you found it, and so shall you leane it.

Th. Ora pues corra el rio por do fuele, pues se arendo la renta con éstas condiciones.

Th. Why then let the riuer runne where it was wont, seeing the thing was hired with these conditions.

Ma. Entrémos en esta tienda que es la mas rica.

Ma. Let vs goe into this shop, for it is the richest.

Me. Que manda v. m. señor cavallero, que ha menester?

Me. What doth your worship command, what haue you need of?

Th. Yo ninguna cosa, ésta señora, muchas.

Th. I of nothing, this Gentlewoman of many things.

Me. Pues pida su merced, que todo se le dará aquí a muy buen precio.

Me. Then let her require what, and all shall be giuen her very good cheape.

Ma. Muestre me acá algunos tocados, guirnaldivas, rapósos, randas deshilados, tocas de todas suertes, y tan bien venga la olanda delgada, cambray, y otras suertes de liencos.

Ma. Shew me some womens head attire, garland head attire, wires of silver, bone worke or bone lace, stitched worke, head attire of all sorts, and also bring fine holland, cambricke, and other sorts of linnen.

Me. Entre v. m. que todo lo verá aquí.

Me. May it please your worship come in, for you shall see all here.

Ma. Todo esto es obra toscos mas \* prima la quiero.

Ma. All this is grosse worke, I would see \* Prima, i. chiefe, principall or a more principall. three cosen german.

Th. Para prima Señora no es buena la hija de vuestro río?

Th. Will not your Vncles daughter serue you for a cosen?

Ma. Es muy gorda aquella, y por esso quería otra mas delgada.

Ma. This is very course, and therefore would I haue other finer.

Me. Pues en esta caxa verá. v. m. el primor del mundo, todo es obra de Milán.

Me. Then in this chest shall your worship see the principallest that is, all is worke of Milan.

Th. Obra de Milán veeme y no me tangas.

Th. Works of Milan \* see me but touch me \* Because they are toles, if you touch them they be aske in peeces.

Ma. Nada de esto me coñtrénia.

Ma. None of these pleaseth me.

Me. Espanto me como se casó v. m. siendo ran mal contentadiza.

Me. I wonder how your worship married being so diuers to please your fancy.

Th. Fue por que vido a el nobio de noche, y como dizen entónçes todos los gatos son pardos.

Th. It was because she saw the bridegroom by night, and as they say, then all cats are grey eyed.

Ma. Muestre me otra mejor obra si tiene, y dexese de preguntar quantos años tengo.

Ma. Shew me some better worke, if you haue any, and leaue of to aske how old I am.

Me. Aora ésta es la última prueba, ve aquí v. m. obra de argenteria ve ali de aljófar, ésta de abalorio, y ésta de perlas, escójate como peras en tabaque.

Me. Now is the last triall, see heere worke of silver, there of small pearle, this other of blacke Bugles; and this of pearle, choose out as peares in a basket.

Ma. Por cierto en ruin háto, poco ay que escojer.

Ma. Verily in a bad stocke, this is but a small choise.

Me. A

Me. Call



Me. A esto llama v.m. ruín, réo que es de peor condición que el filósofo Demócrito, que no halló cosa en el mundo que no tubiése falta.

Th. Esto sin Demócrito lo digo yo, que no ay cosa perfecta en el mundo.

Me. Esto verificarse ha; en cosas naturales; que en las de el arte puede aver perfección cada vna en su género.

Th. Pues que pensáis vos que es el arte, sino ymitador de la natura, y si en la natura no ay perfección menos la avrá en el arte su imitador.

Me. Yo señor no soy filósofo, ni quiero contendér con v. m. mis mercaderías querría que tubiessen su perfección en el precio.

Ma. Si no le tienen en su valor, no le pueden tener en el precio.

Me. Aora señora véa v.m. lo que mas le contenta, y tome lo que no tengo otra cosa mejor.

Ma. Este tocado, este cuélllo, ésta gargantilla de perlas, este regalillo, y este avanillo, ésta dos pares de guantes de flores, y ésta prerina, me parecen bien, todo lo de mas no.

Th. Quanto monta todo esto?

\* i. Seamen pound ten shillings.  
Me. Todo monta tres cientos reales.

Th. Tres cientos años esté de vn lado quien tal diere.

Me. Pues por que no le alcance a v.m. ésta maldición dos cientos, y ochenta.

Th. No entiendo bien esta cuenta.

\* Dos vezes, se refiere a ciento y tambien al quarenta.  
Me. \* Dos vezes ciento y quarenta.

Ma. Buena está la copla, no han de ser mas que dos cientos y cinquenta en todo.

Me. Con v. m. el perdés ganár, pues manda que se a anli, yo no hablaré mas palabra.

Th. Para que quiere hablar mas, si con las habladas ha hecho su agosto.

Me. Por cierto señor de este agosto, po-

Me. Call you this bad, I beleene that you are of a worse condition then the Philosopher Democritus, which found nothing in the world, which had not a fault.

Th. I say this without Democritus, that there is nothing perfect in the world.

Me. This is to be verified in natural things, for in those things of Art, there may be perfection, every thing in his kinde.

Th. Why what thinke you that art is any thing else but a follower of nature, and if nature hath not her perfection, much lesse shall there be any in her follower.

Me. Sir I am not a Philosopher, neither wil I contend with your worship, I would my merchandizes had their perfection in the price.

Ma. If they haue not in their worth, they cannot haue it in their price.

Me. Now Ladie, see that which best likes you, and take it, for I haue no better.

Ma. This kerchiefe, this band, this neck-lace of pearle, this muffle, and\* this fanne, these two paire of gloves perfumed, and this girle likes me, all the rest I care not for.

Th. How much comes all this to?

Me. All comes to\* three hundred rials, or sixpences.

Th. Let him lie three hundred yeares on one side that should giue so much.

Me. Then because this curse may not light upon you, giue two hundred and fourescore.

Th. I vnderstand not well this reckoning.

Me. Twise a hundred, and twise fortie.

Ma. This copla is well, it should be no more then two hundred and fiftie in all.

Me. With your worship to lose is gaine, seeing you command so, I will not speake a word more.

Th. Why would you speake any more, if with that which is spoken you haue made your business.

Me. Truly Sir, of this business I haue gotten

Diálogos.

- ca cosecha he cogido.  
 Th. Señor si hiziéra buena sementéra cogiera mas.  
 Me. Aun tengo aquí otras muchas mercaderías muy curiosas que v. m. no havisto.  
 Ma. Que son?  
 Me. Sartillas, joyeles, cintas de resplandor, brocadéres, rodétes cosas de oro, arandélas, alcacuélllos, gorgueras de réd, camisas labradas, gargantillas de pérlas, y ámbar, todo género de aceite y de perfumes, véa v. m. si le contenta algo.  
 Ma. Otro dia vernémos mas de espácio para ver todo esto.  
 Th. Pareçeme señor que es vuestro oficio, como el de los torneros engaña mucháchos y saca dineros.  
 Me. Pues es mi Señora Margarita muchácho?  
 Th. Basta que sea engañada.  
 Me. A fee que no ha de saver poco quien la ha de engañar.  
 Th. Engañarse ha ella mesma a si misma.  
 Me. Como?  
 Th. Dando dineros por estas bugerías que relúzen y no es oro todo, y quando váya a casa, se hallará con no nada entre dos platos.  
 Me. Para que es el dinero si no para luzírle con ello.  
 Th. Se que esto aunque relúze no lúze.  
 Ma. Ya os he dicho Señor, que os vais al coriente de la de mas gente, y pues os casástes como los otros páslla por donde los otros, no andeis por los estremos que todo hombre estremado no está vn de do de loco, éstas son cargas de el casamiento.  
 Th. La ayuda de el escaravájo que dexa la carga quanto le ayudan.

Ma. Aora

Dialogues.

15

- ren but a little fruit.  
 Th. If you had made your seed time better, you had reaped more.  
 Me. Yet have I many other merchandizes very fine, that your worship hath not seene yet.  
 Ma. What are they?  
 Me. Chaines of leat, Amber, or such like, tables Jewels, girales faire to see to, cloth of Gold the worser sort, head rolles, coifes of Gold, supporters, gorgets of net-worke, wrought shirts or smockes, necke laces of Pearles and Amber, all kinde of painting, and perfumes, see if you like any.  
 Ma. We will come another day, more at leisure to see all this.  
 Th. It seemesto me Sir, that your trade is as that of the \* Turners, which deceives Boyes and gets money.  
 Me. Why is my Lady Margaret a Boy?  
 Th. It sufficeth that she be deceived.  
 Me. In faith, he is not to know a litle that must deceive her.  
 Th. She her selfe will deceive her selfe.  
 Me. How?  
 Th. In giving money for these childsh toys, which shine and yet are not all gold, and when she goes home, it will bee found nothing betweene two platters.  
 Me. Why is money made, but to make shew therewith?  
 Th. I know that this, although it glitter double, it shines not.  
 Ma. I have already told you Sir, that you goe the common course of the moff, and seeing you have married as other men have, passe that way as other men doe, goe not by extremities for every man that is in his extremities, is not a fingers breadth from a foole; these be the charges of marriage.  
 Th. The helpe of marriage \* like the helpe of the Beetle under the cow-turd, which forsakes the burden as soone as they helpe him.  
 Ma. Sir,

\* i. Make tops for children.

\* The nature of the Beetle in the Cow-turd when another comes to help him, leaves all: so in marriage, when another comes to help to maintain his wife, he forsakes her.



Ma. Ahora Señor éllas son pendencias que se han de reñir en casa vámonos.

Th. Vámos Señora, toma vueſtro dinero Señor mercader.

Me. Yo quedo muy contento y beso a v. m. las manos y vea si me manda otra cosa.

Th. Que con salud que tengamos, nunca mas nos veamos.

Me. Por cierto Señor, yo no soy tan ingrato, que cada dia quería ver a v. m. por mi casa.

Th. Yo creo que queríades ver mi bolsa mas no a mi.

Me. No soy tan codicioso como a v. m. le parezco.

Th. No digo yo que lo soys, pero apostaré que queréis mas un real de a quatro, que uno de a dos.

Me. Por adivino le podrían a v. m. castigar.

Th. Lo que con los ojos veo con el dedo lo adivino.

Ma. A Dios mercader.

Me. Beso a v. m. las manos mi Señora.

Ma. Vámos a ora a la lonja a comprar sedas.

Th. Que queréis comprar Señora?

Ma. Que terciopelo rojo, damasco, tafetán, rizo, gorgarón, chamelote, lanillas para vestiros a vos y ami.

Th. Para esto es menester otro dia y a es tarde vamos a comer que mañana yremos a comprar esto.

Ma. Vamos pues aunque yo mas quisiera que quedara oy todo hecho, que no tener que salir mañana otra buelta.

Th. Anda, que bien os holgáis de pasear un rato, para que me queréis hacer entender de el cielo cebolla?

Ma. No seáis malicioso que no medraréis.

Th. Muchácho corre, llama a el platéro que venga a pesar la plata y por tu dinero.

## Dialogues.

Ma. Sir, these are quarrels to be chidden out at home. Let us goe.

Th. Let us goe, take your money Master Merchant.

Me. I am very well content, and kisse your hands, and see if you command any thing else.

Th. Some may haue health that we neuer see one another more.

Me. Truly Sir I am not so ingratefull, but that euery day I would see your worship by my house.

Th. I beleene you would see my purse rather than me.

Me. I am not so conetous as I seeme vnto you.

Th. I say not that you are, but I will lay a wager, that you had rather haue two shillings than one.

Me. They might well punish you for a soothsayer.

Th. That which with the eyes I see, I coniecture with my finger.

Ma. God be with you Master Merchant.

Me. Ladie I kisse your hands.

Ma. Let us goe now to the Exchange to buy silkes.

Th. What would you buy?

Ma. What, plaine veluet, damaske, taffata, wincet veluet, grogram, chamlet, sarge, to cloath you and my selfe.

Th. For all this another day will serue, it is late now let us goe to dinner, for to morrow we will goe to buy this.

Ma. Let us goe then, although I would rather that all were done to day, than to come forth another turne to morrow.

Th. Goe, for you take good pleasure to walke a while, wherefore you would make me beleene the moone is made of a greene cheese?

Ma. Be not malicious, for you shall thrine neuer the sooner.

Th. Boy, runne call the Goldsmith, that he come to weigh the plate and fetch his money.

Diálogo tercero, de un combite, entre cinco cavalleros amigos, llamados, Guzman, Rodrigo, don Lorenço, Mendoça, y Oforio, un maestro sala, y un paje, en el qual, se trata, de cosas pertenecientes a un combite con otras pláticas, y dichos agüdos.

*The third Dialogue, of a banquet betwene five Gentlemen friends, called Guzman, Rodricke, Sir Lorenço, Mendoça, Oforio, a Gentleman Vther, and a Page, in which are handled things belonging to a banquet, with other speeches and wittie sayings.*

G. O La, está ay algun paje?

P. Señor.

G. Sáues a casa de don Rodrigo?

P. Si Señor.

G. Pues vée allá, dile que le bésó las manos, y que si le parece óra de que nos veámos.

P. Aquí está un criado de el Señor don Lorenço.

G. Entre.

Cr. Don Lorenço mi Señor, bésa a v. m. las manos y embía a saber si está en casa, por que tiene un negocio que tratar con. v. m.

G. Que beso a su merced las manos, y que yo fuera a la Suya, a besárselas si no tuviéra una ocupación forçosa que esperar, la qual tambien toca a su merced que si viniere, será el bien venido y se tratará de todo.

Cr. Beso a v. m. las manos.

G. Anda con Dios, ola Dezid a el maestro sala que haga poner éllas mesas, que vernán ya los convidados.

M. Señor v. m. como se quiere servir oy, ala Ytaliana, o ala Françeza, o a la Ynglesa, o a la Flaménca, o a la Todésca?

G. De todos estos estrémos me sacád vn médio, no quiero tantas ceremonias, como el Ytaliáno, ni quiero tanta curiosidad, como el Françés, ni quiero tanta abundancia, como el Yngles, ni quiero que la comida sea tan larga, como el Flaménco ni tan úmida

G. H Oe, is there any Page there?

P. Sir.

G. Dost thou know master Rodrick his house?

P. Yea Sir.

G. Then go thither and tell him that I commend me to him, and if hee thinke good now, that we may meet together.

P. Here is a servant of Sir Lorenço.

G. Let him come in.

S. Sir Lorenço my master commends him unto your worship, and sends me to know whether you be at home, for hee hath a businesse to entreat of with you.

G. I thanke him, and I would have come unto his house to have saluted him, if I had not tarried here about a businesse of importance, the which also concernes him, if hee come he shall be welcome, and wee will talke at large.

S. I take my leave of your worship.

G. God be with you. Hoe tell the Gentleman-vther that he make the tables to be covered, for the guests will come by and by.

V. Sir, will your Worship have your service so day, after the Italian, after the French, after the English, after the Flemish, or after the Dutch manner?

G. Of all these extremes take me out one meane, I will not have so many ceremonies as the Italian, neither will I so much curiositie as the French, neither such abundance as the English, neither will I that the meate be so long as the Flemmings, nor so moist as the

X x

Dutch,



úmida como el tudésco, mas de todos estos extremos, compóneme vn médio a la Española.

M. Ansi se hará como v. m. lo manda.

G. Vuestro mayor cuidado sea que la comida sea caliente y la bebida fría.

M. Que vinos quiere v. m.

G. De todos géneros, blancos, tinto, haloque, claré, cándia, ribadúia, san Martín, toro, y sidra, porque aya de todo.

P. Aquí viene el Señor don Rodrigo.

G. O Señor, v. m. y las buenos años.

R. Beso a v. m. las manos.

G. Como está, v. m. parece que coxéa.

R. Dime vn golpe a el apcár de el caválo en esta espinilla.

G. En ora mala sea, veámos si es algo.

R. \* No señor, si no que es como dicen dolor de còbdo, dolor de espòlo, duele mucho y dura poco.

G. Mas vale ansi.

R. Como tiene, v. m. a mi señóra doña Maria y a toda su casa?

G. A servício de v. m. aunque ella por no avérme ynbidia díxo, que pues yo comía con mis amigos, ella se quería yr a comer con sus amigas.

R. Hizo su merçéd muy discretamente, en pagar le a v. m. en la misma \* monéda.

M. Todos estos señóres conbidados están aqui, y la comida a punto quando vuéllas merçedes fueren servidos, se podran asentár.

G. \* Señor don Lorenço, v. m. tiene las mañas de el Rey que adonde no está no le hallan.

L. Y v. m. quiere parecerse Alcina de quien dize Orlando que por engaño, trayálos hombres a gozár de sus regálos.

G. Però, no serán vuestras merçedes convertidos en animales como ella hazía.

L. \* No me asegúro, que dexe de bolverse

Dutch, but of all these extremes, compound me a meane after the Spanish fashion.

V. So shall it be as your Worship commandeth.

G. Let your chiefest care be that the meat be hot, and \* the drinke coole.

V. What wines will your Worship haue?

G. Of all sorts, white Sacke, deepe red brackish wine, Hallocke, Claret, Candie, \* Ribadavia, \* S. Martin, Toro, and Cider, for that there may be of enery sort.

P. Here commeth master Rodericke.

G. Oh Sir, you are as welcome as the good yeere.

R. Sir I thanke you heartily.

G. How doe you Sir, it seemes you halt.

R. I hit my selfe a blow in lighting from my horse, in this shin bone.

G. In illtime, let vs see if it be anything.

R. No Sir, it is (as they say) like the paine of a blow on the elbow, or the sorrow of a bridegroom, \* it grieueth much and is quickly done.

G. It is the better.

R. How doth my Lady Marie your wife, and all your family.

G. At your seruice, although she saies (not because she enuies me) that since I banquet with my friends, she would goe to dinner to hir friends.

R. She dealt very discreetly to pay you with the same money.

V. All the Gentlemen that are inuited are here, and dinner is readie, when your Worships please, you may sit downe.

G. Sir Lorenço you haue the propertie of a King, that where he is not, there they finde him not.

L. And you will bee like Alcina of whom Orlando maketh mention, which brought men to take pleasure in her dainties to entrap them.

G. But you shall not be turned into beasts, as she turned them.

L. I am not assured of that, for some of vs may

\* In Spaine they coole their wine by setting the flagons in snow water.

\* Ribadavia a whitish Sacke growing in Galicia about a village called Ribadavia.

\* Wine of Saint Martin the most delicate wine of Spaine, growing about S. Martin, a tunne in the kingdom of Toledo in Spaine.

\* Because they haue had small conuersation together to increase love.

*Diálogos.*

vérfese alguno en córra.

R. ✱ De buen vino quien quiera se caça vna en el año.

G. Cada vno su alma en su palma, qual el tiempo tal sea el tiéuto. Ea Señores tomen sillas v. s. mercedes y sienten se.

L. Déxenos v. m. ante todas cosas conrenplár vn rato la curiosidad de la méfa.

R. ✱ No tiene mas pieças vn juego de maistre corál, que están hechas de las servilias.

O. Yo aqui véo vna galéra, que no le falta mas, que la chúsma y palaménta.

M. Pues acá está vn cavalloque no sé yo, si el cavallo de Troya éra tan bien hécho.

L. Ami me ha caído en suerte el escudo de Hércules.

R. Y este que está aqui, que es?

M. A mi me parece, que es vna pirámida de las de Egipto.

O. O es el sepulcro de Máufalo, o la torre de Babel.

G. Aóra déxen esto vuestras marçédes y siéntense, si, son servidos.

R. No se puede dexár de mirár el castillo de la ensalada.

L. Por mi vida, que no tiéne mejor vista el de Milán.

G. Si cada cosa se ha de mirár de por si, yr se nos ha el dia en flóres. Cada vnatre su silla, que ésta no es méfa de cumpliméntos.

O. No los déve avér entre amigos.

G. Yo soy ynimiçíssimo de çerimónias.

R. ✱ A mi no me parecen bien ningunas, si no son las que haze la yglésia.

G. Ola, plátos, tome v. m. esse Señor don Lorénço.

L. Haga v. m. parasi, que lo mismo hará cada vno.

R. No se qual sea mejor v'so este que víamos en España o el que se v'sa en ynglaterra.

G. Que

*Dialogues.*

19

may suffer himselfe to be \* runned into a Fox.

R. *Whofooner loves good wine, \* hunts the Fox once a yeere.*

G. *Euery one holds free will in his hande, as the time requires so frame thy desires. Goe to Gentlemen, betake your selves to your chaires and sit downe.*

L. *Suffer vs I pray aboue all things to behold a while the curiositie of this table.*

R. *A Inglar hath no more inuentions and peeces than are made in these \* table napkins.*

O. *I see here a gally, there wants nothing but the gally staves and the oares.*

M. *And here is a horse, that I know not if the horse of Troy were so well made.*

L. *And here hath fallen to my lot Hercules shield.*

R. *And this which is here, what is it?*

M. *It seemes to me to be one of the \* Pyramids of Egypt.*

O. *Or it is Mausolus \* Tombe, or the tower of Babell.*

G. *Now leaue off this, and sit downe if it please you.*

R. *One cannot choose but looke vpon the sallet made like a castle.*

L. *In faith the castle of Milan is no better to see to.*

G. *If we must stand to behold euery thing by it selfe, the time will be gone without doing any thing. Euerie one draw his chaire, for this is not a table of complements.*

O. *They ought not to be among friends.*

G. *I am the greatest enemy in the world to ceremonies.*

R. *None of them seeme good vnto me, except it be those which the Church makes.*

G. *Hola, \* dishes. Take this Sir Lorénço.*

L. *Make a dish for your selfe, for euery one will doe the like.*

R. *I know not which is the better custome which wee vse in Spaine, or that which is used in England.*

X x 2

G. What

\* To be drunk.

\* I keep the cat, and drinke once a yeere.

\* Table napkins at a banquet or meeting in Spain set out with dunces fashions, as of beasts, birds, etc. thus the Marquis of Almazan said.

\* There were many Pyramids, but two of them were reckoned one of the seven wonders of the world.

\* Which for the magnificence thereof was accounted one of the wonders of the world, and was built by his wife Queene Artemisia.

\* They eat in little dishes their meat, and not upon trenchers in Spaine.



- G. Que es el v'so de ynglaterra?  
 R. Comer primero lo cozido, que lo asado, nos otros hazemos a el revés.  
 L. Segun reglas de medicina primero se deven comer los manjares que son mas duros de digestión.  
 G. Y está esto en razón para que se venga a hazer la digestión en vn tiempo.  
 L. Pues que sea mas duro de digestión, lo asado que lo cozido, es cosa clara.  
 O. Yo como soy mas goloso, hallo otra razón.  
 L. Qual es?  
 O. Que toda cosa asada, es mas sabrosa que la cozida, y así, yo lo querría a el principio por que sobre buen cimiento buen edificio se haze.  
 Mc. Pues yo aunque callo, piedras apañó.  
 R. Anda v. m. discreto, que obéja que bála bocado pierde.  
 G. A mi me parece que andan ya en seco estos molinos.  
 L. De la boca me lo quitó v. m.  
 G. Pues si yo lo quité, justo es que yo lo ponga. Ola, dad nos de beber, cada vno pida lo que mas gusto le diere, que de todo ay.  
 R. Páje yo soy muy devoto de a quel santo que partió la capa con el pobre.  
 P. A buen entendedor pocas palabras, de lo de sant Martin quiere v. m.  
 R. O como eres discreto, Dios me de siempre contienda, con quien me entienda.  
 L. Pues yo vn tiempo fui torero, y me holgava siempre con \* toros bravos.  
 G. Señores y brindo a quien tosiere.  
 O. \* Vala me Dios y que res friados que estamos todos, no se tosiemas en vn sermón de quarésma.  
 R. Esta gracia, dicen que tenemos los Españoles que somos como monas

- G. What is the manner of England?  
 R. To eat their sodde meat first before their roast, wee doe quite contrary.  
 L. According to the rules of Physicke, men ought first to eat those meats which are most hard of digestion.  
 G. And that stands with reason, because digestion may be made together.  
 L. Then that roast meat is more hard of digestion then the sod, it is a thing out of doubt.  
 O. I that am a great eater, finde another reason.  
 L. What is it?  
 O. That every thing roasted is more sweet to the taste than the sod, and so therefore would I have it at the first, for upon a good foundation, a good building is made.  
 M. \* Although I hold my peace, I gather up stones.  
 R. You say very right, for that sheepe that bleateth looseth a bit.  
 G. Me thinks these mills goe now dry.  
 L. You tooke it out of my mouth.  
 G. If I took it out, it is reason I should put it in. Hola give vs drinke, every one aske for that which hee likes best, for there is of every sort.  
 R. Page, I have great deuotion to that \* Saint which departed with a peece of his cloake to a poore man.  
 P. To a good vnderstander a word is enough, you would haue that of Saint Martin.  
 R. O how you are in the right, God send me to dispute alway with him that vnderstandeth what I say.  
 L. I was once a courser of Bulls, and I alwaies tooke pleasure in fierce \* Bulls.  
 G. Gentlemen, I drinke to him that shall cough.  
 O. God blesse me, and what colds we haue all taken, there is not more coughing in a Lenten sermon.  
 R. This fashion (they say) that we Spaniards haue, that we are as apes, which

\* He that is silent gathereth reasons to confute his aduersarie.

\* Saint Martin gave a peece of his cloake to a poore man, and wine of Saint Martin the most dainty of all Spaine.

\* He alludes to wine of Toro, wines called vino de Toro, which is a Bull, as also a townes name.

*Diálogos.*

mónas amigos de hazer lo que vemos hazer a otros.

L. \* Anſi dize vn refrán, ſi no hago lo que véo, todo me méo.

G. Cada vno aſga de ſu perdiz, y la aderéce como mejor le pareciére, ay aſtán limónes, limas, naranjas, pimiénta, y todo lo demás.

R. \* La perdiz, dizen los médicos, que ſe a de comer entre tres compañeros para que no haga mal.

L. Tiénen razón, que han de ſer el hombre, vn gato, y vn perro.

O. Vuéſtras mercedes no han notado la variedad de aſlados que aqui nos han traído.

R. Que eſtá debaxo de aquella enramada?

G. Vna cabeça de javalí.

R. Eſtónçes ramos de raverña ſon aquellos.

L. Antes a el contrario que el ramo en la tabérna llama a los borrachos a el vino, y aquellos llaman a el miſmo vino, aſi como la piédra ymáñ el azéro.

O. A Señor Mendóza partí de eſſe Xigóte con vueſtros amigos.

M. \* Señor el mio murió ſúpito.

R. Parece que havéis reſpondido, un gran A deſeſio, i. diſparate.

O. Pues aunque lo parece, no lo es, que a ſu provecho ha hablado el eſcñór Mendóza.

R. Pues, ſi no nos lo declara, no ſaldremos de dúbda.

M. Señor, es el caſo, que dos compañeros llegaron a una yénta y como no uviéſſe otra coſa que cenar, que una gallina aſlada, el uno de ellos que tenía buena hambre, y éra hombre aſtúco, dixo a el otro compañero, enquanto que yo apáro eſta gallina, conáme de que murió vueſtro padre: el otro ſe cemençó a enternecer, y con lágrimas le relató un proçeſo bien largo de la enfermedad de ſu padre, y como avía muerto, en lo qual tardó

*Dialogues.*

21

which do that which they ſee others to doe.

L. So ſaith the proverbe, If I doe not what I ſee, I all to be piſſe me.

G. Every one faſten on his Partridge, and order him as beſt ſhall ſeeme good unto him, there are Limons and Orenges, Pepper, and all things elſe.

R. A Partridge, as Phiſitions ſay, is to be eaten betweene three companions, that he may doe no harme.

L. They ſay true, that is, betweene a man, a cat, and a dog.

O. You have not marked the varietie of the roaſt, which heere they have brought us.

R. What is under thoſe greene boughes?

G. The head of a wilde Boare.

R. Then it is the buſh of a Tauerne.

L. Rather the contrary, for the Tauerne buſh innites thoſe that love drinke to the wine, and theſe boughes innites or drawes unto it Wine it ſelfe; even as the loadſtone draweth to it ſteele.

O. A maſter Mendoza part this roaſt leg of mutton with your friends.

M. Sir, mine dyed ſuddenly.

R. It ſeemes you have answered with a ſpeech quite beſide the purpoſe.

O. Although it ſeeme, it is not ſo, for maſter Mendoza hath ſpoken it for his advantage.

R. But if he doe not expound it, we ſhall not know what it means.

M. Sir, this it is, that two companions came to an Inne upon the high way, and as there was nothing elſe to ſuppe withall, but one hen roaſted: one of them which was well hungry and acraſtie fellow, ſaid to the other companion, in the meane while that I breake vp and order this hen, recount unto me whereof your father died. The other began to be tender hearted, and wiſh teares related unto him a long proceſſe of the ſickneſſe of his father, & how he died, wherein he ſtood ſo long, that when he remembered



tardó tanto, que quando acordó ya el otro se avía comido, casi toda la gallina, el hallando se burlado, quiso esquivarse y dixo le compañero, pues yo os he contado la muerte de mi padre, contáme vos, la, de el vuestro, el compañero, por no perder la parte que le quedava y concluir presto razones, respondió, Señor, el mío murió súbito: con la qual Repuesta el otro quedó muy burlado y el le ayudó a despachár lo que faltava.

R. Pues aquí no corre ese riesgo.

M. No, pero yo soy como el cucullillo que no canto bien hasta que tengo el estómago lleno.

L. Con licencia de el Señor Guzman quiero ymbiar esta pella de manjar blanco a un amigo.

G. Con mi licencia no yrá sola si no la acompaña v. m. con aquel pávo, o este faisán o el francolin.

R. Por vida de don Lorenço es amigo o amiga?

L. \* Queréis que confiese sin tormento.

G. \* Y quando os le den antes mártir que confessor.

O. \* O que reverenda que viene nuestra madre la olla.

R. Y bien adornada de todas sus pertenencias.

M. Yo deséo saver, donde o porque le llamaron olla podrida?

L. Metaforicamente, porque así como en vn muladar se púden muchas cosas diferentes, y de todas se haze la basura así la olla que es compuesta de muchas cosas se viene a hazer vn guizado o potaje.

M. Tan buena metáfora fue essa como el que llamó Rey a el que guarda los puercos.

O. Por mi passatiempo yo me quiero poner a contar de quantas cosas está compuesta su merced de nuestra olla, carnero, vaca, tocino.

d.L. \* Ellas

membered himselfe, the other had already eaten almost all the hen, he finding himselfe mocked, would quit himselfe, and said unto him, companion, seeing I have told you the death of my father, doe you tell me now the death of your father: his companion for that hee would not loose that part which remained, and because he would be short answered, Sir, my father died suddenly: with which answer he gave his fellow a scoffe, and himselfe time to dispatch the rest.

R. But here is not the like danger.

M. Although not, I am like the cuckow, which sing not untill I have my stomack full.

L. With leave of Master Guzman, I will send this round ball of \* Manjar blanco to a friend.

G. With my leave it shall not goe alone, but that you accompanie with it, this peacocke, this seasant, or this francolin bird.

R. I pray you hartily Sir Lorenço, is it a he friend or she friend?

L. Will you that I confesse without the racke?

G. And when they doe racke you, rather prone a Martyr then a Confessor.

O. What a reverend person comes here, our mother the meat.

R. And well adorned with all her appurtenances.

M. I desire to know, from whence or why they called it \* Olla podrida.

L. Metaphorically, because even as in a dung hill many different things rot together, and of all these they make dung for the field: even so the pot which is compounded of many things is made one ielly or potage.

M. This was as good a Metaphor as that of him, which called the King the keeper of hogs.

O. For my recreation I will set my selfe to reckon, of how many things this worshipfull the pot, is compounded, first mutton, beefe, and bacon.

L. These

\* A meat made of breasts of hens, milke, sugar, rice beaten, and spices mixed withall, one of the daintiest meats used.

\* A rotten or putrified pot. Also a hotchpotch of many meats together.

*Diálogos.*

- d. L. \* Ellas son las tres potências de la olla como las de la alma, memoria, entendimiento, voluntad.
- O. Luego se sigue repollo, nâvos, çevollas, ajos.
- d. L. \* Ellas son las quatro virtúdes cardinales.
- O. Cavéças, y pies de âves, culantro verde, alcarabéa, cominos, todas espécias, las de mas yervas, y no las conosco, otro las quénite.
- d. R. Lo que yo contaré despues, será lo bien que me ha sabido.
- d. L. De el marques chapin vitêlo Ytaliâno, que fue uno de los mas valientes soldadôs que ha tenido aquella naçion, se quenta que quando fue a España le dieron tanto gusto estas ollas, que nunca querria comer en su casa, sino que yendo por la calle oia en casa de algun labrador rico, adonde se comia alguna olla de éstas, y se entrâva allâ y se a sentâva a comer con el.
- d. R. Devia lo de hazér por comer a costa agéna.
- L. No, que antes que saliêsse mandâva a su mayordomo pagâsse toda la costa de la olla.
- M. Pare, mira como pones este plato no deribes el saléro.
- L. Si, si, guarda, que es el aguéro de los mendôzas.
- R. Ya todos somos Mendôzas en esto.
- L. Esta rastra nos quedô de la gentilidad.
- M. Hemos visto esperiências muy verdaderas.
- O. \* Créo en Dios y no en putas viejas.
- M. Ellas son de las que yo me procuro siempre guardar.
- R. O señor Guzman para que es esto que se trae agora?
- G. Dizen que para comer.
- R. Si, però éra menester hazér nuevos estômagos, en que e châllo.
- O. Mandâr los hazér de barro a tuêco de

*Dialogues.*

23

- L. These are the three powers of the pot, as the three powers of the soule, memory, understanding, will.
- O. Now follow Cabbage, Turneps, Onions, Garlike.
- L. These be the foure Cardinall vertues.
- O. The heads and feet of Birds, the herb Carokes or S. Johns herb, Comines, all sorts of spices, the most part of herbs, I know them not, let another speake of them.
- R. That which I will say of it shall be the good I have tasted in it.
- L. Of Marques Chapin Vitela, an Italian, which was one of the most valiant Souldiers, which that Nation hath had, it is said, that when he went to Spaine, these hodgepots liked his taste so well, that he neuer would dine in his owne house, but that going in the street, where he smelt in the house of any rich Farmer, where any of these hodgepots were eaten, there hee entred, and sat downe to dinner with him.
- R. Belike hee did that to dine at another mans charges.
- L. No, for before he went out of doores he commanded his Steward to pay all the cost of the hodgepot.
- M. Stay, look how thou puttest this platter, doe not throw downe the Salt-seller.
- L. Yea, yea, take heed, for it is the Mendozas malum omen.
- R. We are all Mendozas in this.
- L. This trace doth remaine to vs from the Gentiles.
- M. Wee have seene many true examples hereof.
- O. I beleue in God, and not in old Wines tales.
- M. Those are they from which I alwaies seeke to keepe my selfe.
- R. O master Guzman, wherefore is this that they bring now?
- G. They say for to eat.
- R. Yea, but it were need to make stomacks to receiue it.
- O. Cause them to be made of Clay, for a small



de poco dinéro.

M. Estas tortas reales, son como cuerpo que no ocupa lugar.

L. Yo tengo de provar esta pepitoria.

R. Yo conel \* manjar real me acomodo.

G. No ay quien prueve estos guisados, estos torrefinos lampreados, aquel adobado, el carnéro verde, las albóndigas, ni lo de mas.

T. \* Todo esto es como Pedro por de mas.

O. O como alla voy no hago mengua.

G. Alçalo pues muchacho desembaraca y trae aquella fruta de farren.

P. Aqui esta señor, y la meloja y todo.

R. Esto allá a los aguados, que la borracha no quiere pásala.

G. Trae pues la fruta de postre, camuecas, peras, azeitunas, nuezes, avellanas, y la caja de mermelada.

L. Hasta quando hemos de comer?

R. \* Hasta enfermár, como dize el refrán.

L. Y despues ayunar hasta sanár.

O. Levanta esta mesa paje, que es ya gula tanto comer.

M. \* Yo he perdido la gana, como si me la quitáran con la mano.

L. El mejor remedio, que halláron los filósofos, contra la hambre, fue este.

R. \* Esta filosofia algo es gruésa de hilaca.

O. Mejor se podrá dezir verdad apurada que ya saveis lo que es.

L. \* Ya se que verdades apuradas son neçedades.

O. Mas pulido lo queria yo dezir.

R. Como?

O. Yndiscreçiones.

d. L. Tanto monta cortár, como desatar,

small price of money.

M. These riall tarts are as the bodie which filleth no place.

L. I will proove this \* Pepitório or gallimaufry.

R. I doe apply my selfe to this riall dish of meat.

G. Is there no body to proue these other meates, these hogs liners with the hogs caule fried with the fat, that hodgepot of mutton, mutton stuffed with parslly, the chopped meat made into round bales, neither the rest.

L. All this is as Peter too much.

O. Oh as I goe there I neuer faile.

G. Take off boy,\* rid the table, and bring these fritters.

P. Here it is Sir, and the \* Meloja and all.

R. That there is for those that drinke water, for one that lones wine lones not to eat \* Raisins.

G. Bring fruit for the last service, pippins, peares, olives, wallnuts, small nuts, and the box of Marmalade.

L. Till when shall we eat?

R. Vntill we be sick, as saith the proverbe.

L. And afterward to fast till we bee in health.

O. Take away this table, Page, for it is gluttony to eat so much.

M. I have lost my stomach, as though they had taken it from me with ones hand.

L. The best remedie that euer Philosophers found against hunger, was this.

R. This Philosophy is somewhat of a grosse thread.

O. Better may you say a refined truth, you know what I mean.

L. I know that refined truths are fooleries.

O. I would giue it a better terme.

R. How?

O. Indiscretions.

L. It comes all to one, to cut it off or vntie it,

\* Made of the heads, livers, hearts, breasts, feet, of ducks, geese, or other birds, &c.

\* Of paste of Almonds and sugar, eggs, breasts of hens, milke, cynamon, and diuers sorts of spices verylike Manjar blanco.

\* Wine sodden to the third part for a sauce for the fritters.

\* But salt meats to make them drinke.

tár, como dixo Alexandrè.  
d. R. Ola paje, tráe unos naipes entre-  
tengámos el tiempo.  
M. Eſto me contémra, vengan que deſ-  
ſéo eſquitár me de un eſcudo  
que perdí eſtórro día.  
d. L. \* No me péſa ami de que mi hijo  
juégue, ſino de que ſe quiere  
eſquitár.  
M. El tahúr, chica ocaſión ha menester  
para bolvér a el juégro.  
d. L. A mi me parece que ſola una.  
M. Qual es?  
d. L. Tener dineros.  
M. Ni al tahúr faltó que jugar, ni al go-  
loſo que comér, ni al enduradór  
que endurár, ni al borácho que  
bevér.  
d. R. Aquí eſtán los naipes, que jugaré-  
mos?  
d. L. Iuguémos gana piérde.  
M. Es juego de mucha flema.  
d. L. Pues ſéa a el triúnſo.  
M. Quéde para los viejos.  
d. L. A los ciénos.  
M. Deſvanéce ſe me la cabéça, de eſtár  
ſiempre conándo.  
d. L. Menos os agradará el chilindrón.  
M. Eſte para las mugéres de tras de los  
riçones.  
d. L. No es, ſi no que vos no queréis ju-  
ego de virtúd, ſi no de arrebatá  
capas.  
M. Para que hemos de eſtár gaſtándo  
\* tiempo, ſino lo que ſe a de  
empeñar, vanda ſe, como dizen.  
d. R. Si, por que haziénda hécha, no da  
priéſta.  
d. L. \* Y mas quando le gánan a el hom-  
bre ſu dinero, le quiran preſto  
de cuidádo.  
M. He aquí eſtán los naipes juguémos  
treinta por fuerça, o los albúres  
que todos eſtos ſon buenos ju-  
egos.  
d. R. Yo no ſoy amigo de ellos, ſi no de  
juegos de primór, como el Rey-  
nádo, el tres dos y as, triúnſo  
calládo y ótros ſemejantes.

O. Ora

it, as Alexander ſaid.  
R. Hola Page, bring Cards, let vs paſſe a-  
way the time.  
M. That pleaſeth me well, let them come,  
for I deſire to quit my ſelfe of a  
crowne, that I loſt this other day.  
L. It greenes me not that my ſonne is a  
gameſter, but that hee will goe to  
quit himſelfe.  
M. The gameſter requirerh but ſmall oc-  
caſion to returne to play.  
L. It ſeemes to me but one onely.  
M. What is it?  
L. That he haue money to doe it.  
M. Neither hath the gameſter euer wan-  
ted money to play, nor the glutton  
to eat, nor the patient to ſuf-  
fer, nor the louer of drinke to  
drinke.  
R. Here are the cards, what ſhall we play  
at?  
L. Let vs play at Loadam.  
M. It is a play of much patience.  
L. Then let it be at Trump.  
M. Let that be for old men.  
L. At Mount ſant.  
M. It makes my head to be in a ſwonne, to  
be alwaies counting.  
L. Leſſe will the play of Chilindron like  
you.  
M. That is for women by the ſire ſide.  
L. It is not, but that you will not haue any  
game of vertue but ſweepe ſtake  
play.  
M. Wherefore ſhould we waſte time, but  
that which we muſt pwayne, let vs  
ſell our right as they ſay.  
R. Yea, but ones ſubſtance made vp, let  
there be no haſte to loſe ones mo-  
ney.  
L. And moreouer, when they win a mans  
money from him, they ſtraightway  
take him out of care.  
M. Behold here are the cards, let vs play at  
thirtie perforce or Albures, for  
theſe are good plaies.  
R. I loue not theſe, but games of chieſt  
price, as the Reynádo, the three,  
two and ace, ſtill trump, and other  
the like.

O. Now



O. Ora por quitár todos de contiéndá  
yo quíero dar vn médio y sea  
éste la priméra.

M. Muy bien avéis dicho que es médio  
entre los estrémos.

d. L. Yo entiendo que se llamó priméra,  
porque tiene el priméro lugar  
entre los juegos de náypes.

d. R. Alto, que hade ser el tanto?

M. Quatro reales y dies y seis de saca.

d. L. Pues barajá ellos naipes bien.

O. Yo álgo por mano, figura úvo de sér,  
no querría yo yr hecho figura  
sin blanca.

d. R. Yo un ás alcé.

d. L. Yo un quátro.

M. Yo un seis, con que soy mano.

O. Vengan las cartas que yo las doy  
una, dos, tres, quatro. Vna, dos,  
tres, quatro.

M. Paso.

d. R. Paso.

d. L. Paso.

O. Enbido un tanto.

M. No le quiero.

d. R. No le quiero.

d. L. Yo por fuerça avré de quérér, echád  
cartas.

M. Echad me quatro cartas he aqui mi  
tanto.

d. R. He aqui el mio, cada uno meta el  
suyo.

M. Buelvo a pásar.

d. R. Yo tambien.

d. L. Yo hago lo própío.

O. Yo enbido mi resto.

M. Quiero le.

d. R. Yo tambien.

d. L. Pues yo ho me puedo echár.

M. Yo hize una primerilla.

d. L. Yo voy a flux.

M. No querría yo que le hiziéssedes.

d. L. Es éssa buena promixidad?

M. ✱ La caridad bien ordenáda comi-  
énça de si mismo.

O. Yo he hecho cinquéntray çinco con  
que máto su priméra.

d. L. Yo flux con que tiro.

d. R. No juégo mas a éste juégo.

M. Ni yo a otro ninguno que voy a vn  
negócio

O. Now to take away all occasion of strife,  
I will give a meane, and let it be  
Primera.

M. You have said very well, for it is a  
meane betweene extremes.

L. I take it that it is called Primera, be-  
cause it hath the first place at the  
play at cards.

R. Let us go, what is the summe that we  
play for?

M. Two shillings stake, and eight shillings  
rest.

L. Then shuffle the cards well.

O. I list to see who shall deale, it must be  
a coat card, I would not bee a coat  
with nener a blanke in my purse.

R. I did list an Ace.

L. I a foure.

M. I a six, whereby I am the eldest hand.

O. Let the cards come to me, for I deale  
them; one, two, three, foure: one,  
two, three, foure.

M. Passe.

R. Passe.

L. Passe.

O. I set so much.

M. I will none.

R. Ile none.

L. I must of force see it, deale the cards.

M. Give me foure cards, Ile see as much as  
he sets.

R. See here my rest, let every one be in.

M. I am come to passe againe.

R. And I too.

L. I doe the selfe-same.

O. I set my rest.

M. Ile see it.

R. I also.

L. I cannot give it over.

M. I was a small prime.

L. I am flush.

M. I would you were not.

L. Is this good neighbourhood?

M. Charitie well placed, doth first beginne  
with ones selfe.

O. I made fine and fiftie, with which I win  
his prime.

L. I flush whereby I draw.

R. I play no more at this play.

M. Neither I at any other, for I must goe  
about

*Diálogos.*

negócio que me ympórta.

d. L. Pajes toma cada quatro reales de baráto.

Pa. Centuplum accipias.

Pa. En el cielo lo halle v.m. colgado de vn garaváto.

*Diálogo quarto, entre dos amigos, llamados el uno Mora, el otro Aguilar, y un moço de mulas y una Ventérra: trátan se en el de las cosas tocantes a el camino con muy graciosos dichos y chistes.*

M. **O** La Pedro havéis traído mi mula?

P. Señor si, aquí está la mohina.

M. Mohina es nunca buena.

P. Por que, Señor?

M. \* Por que ni mula mohina, ni moça marina, ni moço Pedro en casa, ni Abád por Vezino, ni poyo a la puerta, no es bueno.

P. Yo le prométo a v. m. que es mejor ésta, que la que arastró a el cura quando dezia Dominus providebit.

M. Es vieja?

P. Nunca la vi nacer, mas yo créo que mas vieja éra su madre.

M. Tira cozes?

P. Nunca una sola.

M. Siempre son a pares, camina bien?

P. Todo lo que anda se dexa atrás.

M. Tan buenas gracias tiene a fee que me va enamorando.

P. Vna tiene sobre todas que es grande Ostróloga.

M. Como así?

P. Conoce mejor que vn relóx quando es medio dia, y luego pide cebáda, y si no se la dan dize lunes

*Dialogues.*

27

*about a businesse that concernes me.*

L. Pages take every one two shillings a peece of the winnings.

P. I pray God you may receive it a hundred fold.

P. In heauen I pray God you may finde it hanged on a booke.

*The fourth Dialogue, betweene two friends, the one called Mora, the other Aguilar, and a mulettier and a woman Inne-keeper: Herein are handled things pertaining to the way with very pleasant sayings, and gracious speeches.*

M. **H** Oe Peter, have you brought my Mule?

P. Yea Sir, here is the \* Mohina.

M. Mohina is neuer good.

P. Why Sir?

M. Because neither a mule with a blacke muffle, nor a maid that hath passed the Sea, nor a servant \* Peter in ones house, nor a neighbour Abbot, nor a Well at the doore, is ever good.

P. I promise your Worship that she is better than that which dragged along \* the Curate when he said, Dominus providebit.

M. Is she old?

P. I saw her not foaled, but I beleene that hir dame was elder.

M. Doth she kicke?

P. She neuer giues one alone.

M. They are alwaies by couples, doth shee tranell well?

P. She neuer tranels but shee leanes the way behinde her.

M. She hath so good tricks in faith, that I am in love with her.

P. One she hath above all, for she is a great Astronomer.

M. How so?

P. Shee knowes better than a clocke when it is noone, and forthwith shee lookes for prouender, and if they giue

\* Mohina, signifies anger, passion, disquietnesse, churlishnesse. Also a shee mule with a black face or muffle, aduises hauing iudith strikes. \* i. A knauish seruant.

\* A Curate falling off his mule hanging in the stirrop, was dragged so long, till a labourer in the fildes tooke him out.



lunes y no ay pasar de allí.

\* Lunes, meaning heere the grunting voice of a mule or horse, but Lunes properly signifies Monday.

M. Buen remedio para esto rogár se lo con la espuela.

P. Es flaquísima de memoria.

M. Como?

P. Aunque le hinguén vn palmo de espuela a dos pasos que da, se le ha ya olvidado.

M. \* Traélda, no se me da náda, que topado ha Sancho con su Rocino y si ella es traydora yo soy alébofo, y nos entenderémos a coplas.

P. \* En yendo v. m. con cuydado hará de ella cera y Pávilo que ella con quien se descuyda úsa sus tretas.

M. Echalde la silla, apretálde bien la síncha ponélde gurupéra atahárre y pretál, acorta estos estribos que yo me averné con ella.

P. Quiero poner, vnas acciones nuevas por mas seguridad.

M. Echálde el freno, ponéd le bien el bocádo y acortád la cabeçada mirád si está bien herráda de todos quatro pies.

P. \* En las manos, buenas herraduras y clávos tiene, de los pies de suyo gasta.

M. Echálde el coxín y porta mantéo.

A. Ea compañero hémos ya de acabár de salir oy de aquí?

M. Yo vos venís cavalgando?

A. \* Vos tardáis mas en componér os que vna nóbia.

M. Vuestra mula es mansa?

A. Como vna borrega no lo veis que sufre maléta.

M. \* De el agua mánzame libre dios, que de la braba yo me guardaré.

A. A la vuestra, basta le ser mohína.

M. Mal conocéys vos a quien nunca vistes, pues a fee que está granduáda por zalamánca.

A. En

give her none, then she saies \* Lunes, and stirres not a foot from the place.

M. A good remedy for this to intreat her with the spur.

P. She is most weak of memorie.

M. How?

P. Although you strike into her a hands breadth of the spur, within two steps after she hath forgotten it.

M. Bring her, I care not, for Sancho hath met with his Palfrey, and if she be a \* knavish jade, I am as knavish a rider, and we shall understand one another by couples.

P. You travelling with her, with good heed, you may agree like the \* wax and the wecke, but shee with one that is not aware of hir, will play hir part like a Fencer.

M. Set on the saddle, gird hir hard with the girths, put on the crooper and pottrell, make shorter these stirrups, for I will make agreement with hir.

P. I will put on new stirrup leathers for more securitie.

M. Put on the bridle, make the bit fast, make shorter the head-stall, looke if she be well shod of all foure feet.

P. On the forefeet she hath good shooes and nailes, on the hinder feet she weares out hir owne hoofs.

M. Put the cushion on the saddle, and the portmanteau.

A. How now companion, shall we make an end that we may get hence to day?

M. What are you come already, and a horse-backe?

A. You tarry longer in setting your selfe in order then a bride.

M. Is your mule gentle?

A. As gentle as a lambe, doe you not see he beares a mule.

M. From the still water God keep me, from the raging, I will keepe my selfe.

A. For your mule, it is sufficient, that she is a mule with a blacke muzzle.

M. You hardly know him whom you never saw, but in faith this mule hath taken degree in Zalamánca.

A. In

\* A scabbed horse fit for a staid Squire.

\* The wax of the candle, and the wecke of the candle, i. all in all.

\* Manos, i. the forefeet.  
\* With kicking.

A. En que facultad?  
M. En la de la vellaquería, bachillera en artes de tirar cózes, licenciada en leyes de ventos y de metónes, y doctora es en astrologia y matemáticas.  
A. Por ello está siempre mirando a el cielo.  
M. Es por contemplar los ástros y planetas y signos y sus cursos.  
A. Vámos de aquí querémos larga la jornada.  
M. Quantas leguas pensays caminar oy?  
A. Yo querría que doze.  
M. Pues ala mano de dios Pedro ten esse estribo.  
A. Pedro os Llamays compañero?  
P. A servicio de v.m.  
A. Pues no le haga Dios mas mal a Pedro de el que se le alcança.  
P. No ay porque Dios de salud a su merced.  
A. Sé que las pullas no se han de echar a los amigos.  
M. \* De amigo a amigo chínche en el ojo.  
A. Yo no quiero pléito con vos Pedro que sabéis mucho.  
P. Mas \* Sábe vntorézno.  
A. Moço de mulas vn punto save mas que el diáblo.  
M. Pues que pensáis vos que le falta a Pedro para diablo?  
P. No mas que vn año de aprendiz y vn garavato.  
A. Para que el garavato?  
P. Para sacar a vuestras merçedes de la caldera quando allá váyan.  
M. Nosotros no hemos de yr a el ynfierno.  
P. No se yrán mas lleváros hán.  
M. Aredro váyas malo, ergo maledicte diable.  
A. Pedro amigo, de que se hazela puta vieja?  
P. De la puta móca.  
M. No se haze sino de seldo y eneldo, y de el cagaxón mordeldo, y de el polvo delas \* éras.

A. De

A. In what art?  
M. In the art of villanie, Bachelor of the kicking art, Licentiat of lawes in Innes, and Doctor in Astrologie, and the Mathematicks.  
A. For this cause, sure looks alwaies towards heauen.  
M. It is to contemplate the Stars, Planets, and Signes, and their courses.  
A. Let vs goe, for we haue a long iourney.  
M. How many leagues doe you thinke to trauell to day?  
A. I would willingly goe twelue.  
M. Then in the name of God, Peter hold this stirrup.  
A. Friend are you called Peter?  
M. At your seruice Sir.  
A. Then God doe no more mischief to Peter, then that he knowes himselfe how to practise.  
P. There is no cause why God giue you health Sir.  
A. I know that men ought not to flout their friends.  
M. One friend to another friend, a \* Cinche in the eye.  
A. I will not goe to law with you Peter, for that you know so much.  
P. A rafter of Bacon sauers more.  
A. A mulster knowes one point more then the deuill.  
M. Why what thinke you, what wants Peter to become a deuill?  
P. No more but a yeares apprenticeship, and a flesh-booke.  
A. Why a flesh-booke?  
P. To pull out your Worships out of the cauldern when you goe thither.  
M. We are not to goe to hell.  
P. You are not to go, but they are to carrie you thither.  
M. Come behinde me therefore euill spirit, Maledicte Diabole.  
A. Friend Peter, what is an old whore made of?  
P. Of a young whore.  
M. It is not made but of thy selfe and the herbe Dill, and of shitting eat thy fill, and of the dust of Barne floore, or of the dust of which thou art thy selfe.

\* Chinche, a little round creature with many feet, in hot Countries, breeding in beds, bites worse then a louse, and smelteth filthily.  
\* Sabér, i. To know. Also to savour well in taste, as meat, drinke.

\* éras, hath two significations, one for the floore where they thrash their corne, and also thow art.

Tj

A. I



"Shoes of pack-  
thred made for  
Footmen or Lac-  
kies to tranel a  
foot.

A. De cara me le véo y tiéne alpargates,  
y va a pié.

M. Pedro mira que te dize no respón-  
des?

P. \* No óygo que soy sordo de vna  
muéla.

M. \* Pues a el maestro Cuchilláda?

P. No me lastima mucho esta Herida que  
es dáda vñas arriba, però guarde  
se de el rebés que yo tiraré vñas  
abajo.

A. Pedro yo entiendo que soys vos aquel  
que Llamávan de vrde malas.

P. Pues todo el mundo ojo alerta que  
alguna téngo de vrdir en éste  
camino.

A. Pedro alli viéne vn, caminante échale  
vna pulla.

P. Ola hermano por donde van?

C. A do?

P. En casa de la puta que os parió.

A. Buena a fee otra a el compafiéro que  
quéda atrás.

P. A señór es fuyo el mulo?

C. Qual mulo?

P. Aquel que beséis en el culo.

A. Este cavalléro que viene muy brábo  
no baya sin la fuya.

P. A senor v. m. a caso va a londres?

C. Si voy porque lo dezís.

P. Pues cagaxon para quien va a Lon-  
dres.

M. Que boníte es Pedro si se lavasse.

P. Antes despues de lavado no valgo  
nada.

A. Quanto avrémos andádo Pedro?

P. \* Nunca buelvo a mirár atrás, por no  
ser como la mugér de Lot.

A. Quanto nos falta de aqui a el primer  
Pueblo?

P. Legua y mierda.

M. La legua andarémos nosotros, esotra  
vos la pasaréis.

A. Pues por que se passessin sentir quen-  
ta vn quento Pedro.

P. De dinéros para mi le contára yo de  
buena gana.

A. No

A. I see him inst over against me, and he  
hath \* shoes of packthred, and he  
goes a foot.

M. Peter, hearken what he saith unto thee,  
doest thou not answer?

P. I heare not, for I am deafe of one of my  
chocke teeth.

M. What hath the master of Fence a blow  
or venie?

P. This wound hurts me not much for it is  
given with the hand upward, but  
beware of the swast blow for I will  
draw it with the hand downwards.

A. Peter I understand that you are hee  
which they called a plotter of kna-  
veries.

P. Euerie one looks to himselfe, for I must  
plot something this iourney.

A. Peter there commeth a traveller, be-  
flow a quip on him.

P. Hola brother, which way goes thy?

T. Whither?

P. To the house of the queene thy mother.

A. Good in faith, another to his compani-  
on, which remains behind.

T. How Sir, is the Mule yours?

T. What Mule?

P. That whose arse kisse you.

A. This Gentleman which goeth so boldly,  
let him not passe without his flout.

P. How Sir, goes your Worship to London?

T. Yea, I goe for that you say it.

P. Then a turd for him that goeth to Lon-  
don.

M. Oh how proper a man were Peter, if he  
were washed and painted.

P. Nay after I am washed I am worth no-  
thing.

A. How farre haue we iourneyed Peter?

P. I neuer turne to looke backe, because I  
would not be as Lots wife.

A. How farre haue we from hence to the  
next towne?

P. A league and a turd.

M. The league we will goe, the other thou  
shalt passe.

A. That we may passe ouer this iourney  
without wearisomnesse, tell vs a  
tale Peter.

P. For my part, I would tell money with a  
better will.

A. Not

A. No, si no algun acaecido que te avino por estos caminos.

P. Estonces contar les he vno que me subcedio el viaje pasado haziendo este camino con vn hidalgo.

M. No sea muy largo que me dormiré.

P. Si se durmiere la mohina tendrá cuydado de despertár le.

M. Vos le havéis levantado mil falsos testimonios, mira quan bien camina y quan mansa va?

P. \* A el freir lo verá.

A. Ea dexémos esto vaya el quento.

P. Pocos dias ha, yo vine este camino con vno de los mayores habladores que he conocido en mi vida y como el hablar mucho, y el mentir son tan parientes, dezía las mas terribles mentiras que se pueden ymaginar, pues como el me preguntasse vn dia que me parecia de su buena conversacion, yo le respondí que muy bien, pero que quando contasse algun quento, se Alargasse y pasasse tanto, que dava que murmurar a quantos le oyan, el me dixo pues sea esta la manera quando lleguemos a las posadas, sienta se ruapar demi, y si me viéres contar algo que te parezca que voy fuera de camino, tira me de la halda, estonces yo entenderé, y me deterné, con este concierto llegamos aquella noche a vna venta, donde a caso avian llegado tambien muchos cavalleros, y como se asentassen a cenar y mi amo entre ellos, yo me púte a su lado conforme a el concierto, y como es costumbrecada vno començo a contar las maravillas que avia visto por el mundo, llegó la vez a el bueno de mi amo el qual dixo que avia estado en tierra de Japon, y que entre otras cosas maravillosas que alli avia visto fue vna yglésia que teniamil pies de largo, a este tiempo yo que le

A. Not so, but some chance that hath fallen out to thee on these waies.

P. Then I will tell you one which hapned unto me the last voyage I came this way with a Gentleman.

M. Let it not be too long, for I will sleepe.

P. If you sleepe, the she mule will be carefull to wake you.

M. You have raised a thousand false testimonies against her, behold how well she travellet, and how well she goeth?

P. \* By the frying you shall see.

A. Well let us leave this forward with the tale.

P. A little while since, I came this way with one of the greatest babblers that I knew in my life, and as much prating and lying are nere of kinne, he told the most horrible lies that could be imagined, afterward as he asked me one day, what I thought of his good behanour, I made him answer, that I thought well, but that when hee did tell any tale, hee passed the bounds so much, that hee gave occasion to as many as did heare him, to speake ill of him: behinde his backe: he told me, seeing it is so, when we come to our Innes, sit thou next unto me, and if thou shalt see me tell any thing that seemes unto thee that I go out of the way, pluck me by the skirt, then will I understand and stay my selfe, with this agreement we came that night to a lodging on the high way, whither by chance also many Gentlemen were arrived, and as they sate them down to supper, and my master among them, I set my selfe close by his side, according to our agreement, and as the manner is, every one began to tell of the marvels which hee had scene in the world, the turn came to the good man my master, who said that he had beene in the Land of Iaptha, & among other marvellous things that there he had scene was a church, which was a thousand foot

Y y 2

long:

\* A Collier said coales to a woman, and putting downe his coales put up her frying pan, the woman asking if they were good coales, he answered, A freyre lo verá, i. by the frying she should see.



vide yr tan desmandádo y como estava a lesta tiro le rézio de la halda, el luego me entendió, y dixo, y vno en ancho: los cavallé-ros se començaron a mirár vnos a otros y a son-rey'r se hásta que vno dellos dixo, vala me Dios señór, y para que servía esta yglé-zia tan larga y angosta, de mill pies de largo? y vno en ancho, el replicó agradezcan vuestras mer-çedes que me tiráron de la falda a tiempo, que si no, yo les boto a Dios que yo la quadrára, fue estonçes tanta la risa de todos que a mi amo le convino aquella noche salir se de la venta, por que entre todos quedó por refrán quando alguno contáva algo que parecía mentira \* Le dezia el terçero quadre la v. m. que harto largo está.

M. De vna cosa me espanto yo Pedro.

P. Qual es?

M. Como pudiste durár tan largo tiem-  
po con tu competidór en la fa-  
cultad.

A. \* Si, por que esse es tu enemigo el  
que es de tu ofiçio.

P. Es verdad que muchas vezes le quí-  
se dexár por esso, y se lo dezia  
que no quería mas caminar con  
el, por que era tocádo de mi  
própria enfermedad y no me  
dexava hazér bása.

A. Y querespondió a esso?

P. Luego me prometía con juraménto,  
que callaría toda vna jornada  
para que yo hablásse.

A. Y cumplía lo?

P. Tan ynposible le éra a el poder lo  
\* cumplir cómo a v. m. dijérir  
esse pelo de asno, que ha comi-  
do.

M. Companiero pagado os han vuestro  
travájo.

A. No tenéis rason Pedro así yo os vea  
zarco a poder de nubes.

P. Antes ciegué, que mal véa.

A. \* Así yo os vea arçobíspo con mi-  
tra

long: then I seeing him so far out of  
order, as I was readie prepared,  
pluckt him by the skirt, he present-  
ly understood me, and said, and one  
foot in breadth: the Gentlemen be-  
gan to look one upon another, and  
to smile, untill one of them said, In  
the name of God Sir, and for what  
use served this Church so long and  
narrow, of a thousand foot in length  
and but one in breadth? he replied,  
thanks him, that pulled me by the  
skirt of the garment so soone, which  
if he had not done, I vow to God, I  
had made it foure square: then was  
there such a laughter among all,  
that my master was faine that night  
to get him out of the Inn, for that  
among them all, it remained as a  
proverb, when any man did sell any  
thing which did seeme a lie, the  
third man said unto him, make it  
square, for it is long enough.

M. Of one thing I wonder Peter.

P. What is it?

M. How thou couldest endure so long time,  
with thy competitor in thine owne  
faculty?

A. Tea, for he is thy enemy which is of thy  
owne profession.

P. It is true, for many times I would leave  
him for this cause, and did tell him,  
that I would not travell no more  
with him, because he was infected  
with my disease, and did not suffer  
me to take up \* a trick.

A. And what answer made he to this?

P. Forthwith he promised me with an oth,  
that he would hold his peace all one  
journey, that I might speake.

A. And did he performe it?

P. It was as impossible for him to have po-  
wer to accomplish it, as for your  
worship to digest this \* Asses baire  
which you have eaten.

M. Companion, you are paid home for your  
labour.

A. You mistake Peter, I see you dimme  
sighted, by reason of clouds.

P. Rather wish I you blinde, than that I  
see ill.

A. Nay rather that I may have my sight

\* As at cards.

\* i. Calling him  
asse by craft or  
the gudgeons, or  
fooleries to day  
you have swallow-  
wed.

*Diálogos.*

tra de siere palmas.

- P. Ansi yo levéa a el, Pápa higos de su mula.
- A. \* Echo te vna pulla \* con su pullonçillo que tu mugér te haga ciervo y te llámen todos cuquillo.
- P. \* Echo te vna pulla venida sobre mar, que los dientes se te cáygan y no puedas meár.
- M. Piquémos compañéro que se va ha-ziendo tarde.
- A. Que hora será Pedro?
- P. La de ayer a estas oras puntualmente.
- A. Elso tambien lo dixéra mi mula si supiéra hablar.
- P. Soy yo Relóx, que me pregunta que óra es?
- A. \* A lo menos \* badájo, que monta tanto.
- P. Y si doy adonde daré?
- A. En la cabeça de el puto de tu padre.
- P. Mas cerca está la fuya y sonará bien, pues esta huéca.
- M. Bien camina de andadúra vuestra mula.
- A. Y la vuestra ha bien depórtante.
- M. Si no la convirtiéisse algunas vezes en tróte que pareçe a el de la madre.
- A. Entrémos en esta vénta a dár çevada y comer vn vocádo.
- P. Vn bocádo no mas, mas piénso yo comer de vn çiento.
- M. No os sabréis passár un día sin comer Pedro?
- P. \* Par dios nuestro amo, como dize el vizcaíno, tripas llévan a pies que no pies a tripas.
- A. \* Yo tambien digo que pan y vino ánden camino que no moço garrído.
- P. Paz sea en ésta casa quien está acá huésped?
- V. Quien está alla quien lláma?
- P. Ay posáda Señora?
- V. Si Señor, éntren y léan muy bien venidos que todo recádo ay.

P. Que

*Dialogues.*

33

- to see you an Archbishop with\* a miter of seven band breadths high.*
- P. *Nay not so, but that I might also see you eat the shavings of your mule.*
- A. *I cast thee a bone, with his yong one to gnaw upon, thy wife makes thee a hart, and they call thee Cuckold every one.*
- P. *I cast the bone to gnaw upon at sea, thy teeth fall out, and thy water hold in.*
- M. *Let vs spurre on companion, for it waxeth late.*
- A. *What is it a clocke Peter?*
- P. *Iust the same, as it was yesterday at this time.*
- A. *This could my mule tell me, if she could speake?*
- P. *Am I clocke, that you aske me what it is a clocke?*
- A. *At least thou art a clapper, which is all one.*
- P. *And if I doe strike, where shall I hit?*
- A. *Vpon the head of the buggerer thy father.*
- P. *Your head is neere unto me, and it will sound well seeing it is hollow.*
- M. *Your mule doth go a swift easie pace.*
- A. *And yours ambles well.*
- M. *If she did not change it, sometimes into a trot, which seemes like the trot of hir dam.*
- A. *Let vs goe in into this Inne, to bait and eat a bit.*
- P. *What one bit and no more, I thinke to eat more than an hundred.*
- M. *Can you not passe one day Peter without eating?*
- P. *By God our master, as the\* Biskaine saith, the belly carrieth the feet, and not the feet the belly.*
- A. *I also say, \* that bread and wine are travellers, and not the lustie frolicke youth.*
- P. *Peace bee in this house, who is heere hostesse?*
- H. *Who is there, who calls?*
- P. *Have you lodging mistrie?*
- H. *Yes Sir, come in, and be very well welcome, for all good entertainment is heere to be had.*

\* i. Caróça, which is a high hat of paper set on the head of a Bawd, riding on an Ass to row the streets for a punishment.  
\* Pulla, a stout.

\* Badájo, a clapper of a bell, by a metaphor a ioulthead.

\* A Biskaine travelling a foot saint for want of food, filled his belly, afterward went lustily, and said, the belly carrieth the feet, and not the feet the belly.

\* The lusty youth without eating or drinking must needs faint, and giue him that, although he be faint he goeth forward.

T 3

P. What



- P. Que aurá que comer?
- V. Ay conéjos ay perdíçes, ay pollos, ay gallinas, ay ganços, ay ánades, ay carnero, ay vaca, ay cabrito, ay menudo de puerco.
- P. Bien dixe yo que en su casa de v.m. no podía faltár puerco.
- V. Ni en la fuya faltará vellaco, mientras el estuviere dentro.
- P. No en verdad señora, si no que me dixéron que los dias passados avia v.m. reñido bravamente con la limpieça.
- V. Tambien me dixéron a mi que avia el desterrado la Verguença de su casa.
- M. Huelgo me Pedro que as topado con lo que avias menester.
- P. Y aun ella me ha menester a mi.
- V. \* Yo por cierto, si no es para ponerle en peralvillo con doze y la maestra, no se para que?
- P. Ahora Señora no nos digámos mas calláte, y callémos que sendas nos tenemos.
- V. Ea acábe hablador de Ventaja, pida lo que ha menester.
- P. Demechéno, y paja, y çebáda, para las mulas.
- V. Quanto quiere?
- P. Dos harnéros de héno y un zelemín de çebáda.
- V. Muy poco es para tres véstias.
- P. Aquí no ay mas que dos qual es la otra?
- V. La otra soys vos y mas tragóna que esótras dos.
- P. Si soy mas, no de paxa ni çebada porque es muy dura de digestión.
- V. Mas duro es vn garróte y suele ablandár las costillas a vn vellaco.
- M. Bien está no passe mas adelante señora Huespedes quanto pónen de aquí a la çiudad?
- V. Señor çinco leguas.
- M. Podrémos los caminar de a qui a la noche?
- V. Como picáren?

M. Ay

- P. What shall we have to dinner?
- H. There are conies, there are Partridges, there are Chickens, Hens, Geese, Ducks, there is Mutton, there is Beefe, Kid, and Hogs inwards.
- P. Well said I, that in your house there could not want hogs flesh.
- H. Nor in your house shall there want a knave while you are within.
- P. No in truth Mistres, but they told me that awhile agoe you and cleanliness had beene at bate.
- H. And they told me, that you had banished shamefastnesse from your house.
- M. I am glad Peter that thou hast met with that thou hadst need of.
- A. And also she hath need of me.
- H. I have need of him truly, if it be but to put him in \* Peralvillo to shoot twelve arrowes at him, with the \* mistris, I know not for what else?
- P. Now Mistris, let us say no more, hold your peace and let us be still, for we have a quip a peece.
- H. Goto, make an end babler in graine, and demand that you have need of.
- P. Give me hay, and straw, and provender for the mules.
- H. How much will you have?
- P. Two sienes full of hay, and a pecke of barley.
- H. It is very little for three beasts.
- P. Heere are no more than two, which is the other?
- H. The other are you, and more devouring than the other two.
- P. If I be more, it is not of straw nor barley, for it is very hard of digestion.
- H. Harder is a cudgell, and yet it useth to soften the ribs of a knave.
- M. It is well, passe no further forward mistresse, how farre doe they count it from hence to the Citie?
- H. Sir five leagues.
- M. May we ride them betwixt this and night?
- H. As you shall hasten.

M. Is

\* Peralvillo, a mount in Spaine where they shoot malefactors to death.

\* i. That arrow which butteth on the heart.

*Diálogos.*

- M. Ay algun río en el camino o algun mal passo?
- V. Pordo quiera, ay vnalegua de mal camino.
- M. Ay adonde herrár?
- V. El camino no señor, las mulas si Señor, vuestras merçedes mil pares ay donde pueden herrár.
- M. \* Si son los yerros por amores, dignos son de perdonár.
- A. Señora huésped a cuya es ésta venta?
- V. De vn cavallero de la çiuðad.
- A. Quanto págan por ella de arrendamiento en vn año?
- V. Mas que ella vale, quinientos ducados.
- M. De essa suerte, buena maña se an menester dar a hurtár para sacár la costa.
- P. Essa no falta, el gáto por liebre, la carne de mula por vaca, el vino passado por água todo va de ésta manera.
- V. \* Mala pasqua de Dios a el vellaco y mal san luán, quando ha visto el, esso en mi venta?
- P. Visto lo no, gustádo lo si.
- V. Vos mentís como velláco, que nunca tal.
- P. \* Aora estémos a quenta huésped a no demos de comér a el Diablo, venga acá no se acuerda el otro día quando yo vine por aquí con un cavallero, que le pidió le diesse un pedaço de carne de aquello que le avía dádo otro dia antes quando avía passado por aquí, porque dezía que le avía savído muy bien, lo qual oyendo aquel niño chiquito, dixo caro nos costaría, si cada dia se nos avía de morir un Roçin.
- V. Es Verdád que aquello fue aquel Roçin que se nos murió, pero estava tan gordo y tan lindo que éra mejor que carne de vaca.
- M. Señora huésped aunque mas lindo sea, no nos dee de el agora.
- V. No Señor que ya se acabó, hasta aora avia de durár?
- M. Vca-

*Dialogues.*

35

- M. *Is there any River in the way, or any euill passage?*
- H. *Which way soeuer you goe, there is a league of euill way.*
- M. *Is there any place\* herrár?*
- H. *The way, no Sir, the mules, yes Sir, a thousand passages where you may erre.*
- M. *If they be errors for laue, they are worthy to be pardoned.*
- A. *Mistresse hostesse, whose is this Inne?*
- H. *A Gentlemans of the Citie.*
- A. *How much doe you pay for the hire of it by the yeare?*
- H. *More than it is worth, five hundred duckets.*
- M. *By this meanes they had need good skill to steale to get out their charge.*
- P. *That skill wants not, a cat for hare flesh, the flesh of a mule for beefe, wine mixed with water, all goes in this manner.*
- H. *God send the knaue an ill Easter, and an ill Midsummer, when haue you scene this in my Inne?*
- P. *I haue not scene, but I haue tasted it?*
- H. *You lie like a knaue, there was neuer any such matter.*
- P. *Hostesse we are upon the reckoning now, \* let vs not giue the diuill his dinner, come hither, doe you not remember the other daie, when I came this way with a Gentleman which requested you to giue him a peece of meat, of that you had giuen him the other day before, when he passed this way, because he said it liked his taste very well, the which the little childe hearing, said, it would be deare flesh vnto vs, if euery day there should die a nag.*
- H. *It is true, that there was a nagge which dyed, but hee was so fat and so faire, that hee was better than beefe.*
- M. *Mistresse Hostesse, although he might bee more sine, giue vs not of that now.*
- H. *No Sir. for he is already made an end of, what think you it could last til now?*
- M. Let

\* To wife or  
ere. Also to  
show a horse or  
mule.

\* Let vs not  
bravle and fall  
out, and so get to  
know pen words,  
and so make the  
diuill dine.



M. Veámos el vino que tal es.  
 V. El vino es tal, que bástala llevar al cielo a él, que acostubrarse a beberlo.  
 P. Ola nuestra áma no basta ventérase si no creje?  
 V. Lo que yo digo es verdad y lo probaré que el buen vino, lleva los hombres a el cielo.  
 M. De que manera?  
 V. El buen vino cría buena sangre, la buena sangre engendra buena condición, la buena condición pára buenas obras, las buenas obras, llévan a los hombres a el cielo.  
 M. Ella ha aprobado su yntención bastantemente.  
 A. Pero no se podrá dezir esto por este vino.  
 V. Por que?  
 A. \* Por que esto mas parece vinagre y agua.  
 V. Agua, no por vida de mi ánima, que tiene mas de la, que le echó el de lo alto.  
 M. Pues Dios no le vino a echar agua, que sin agua lo crió.  
 P. Bien, no está v.m. en el quénto, el de lo alto es su marido, que está en lo alto de la casa, y desde allí, échala agua en el vino, por una cebratana.  
 A. Con vos me entiérren Pedro que sabéis de quenta.  
 M. Yo entendía que llamáva a Dios, el de lo alto.  
 A. En todas las cosas ay engaño.  
 P. Si no es en la ropa vieja.  
 V. Por ciérto que tienen razón, que está ya el mundo muy perdido, por esto nos hémos recogido mi marido y yo a ésta venta, por acabar en buena vida.  
 M. Esta llamáys buena vida huésped?  
 P. Si Señor, que peor érala de los de Sodoma y Gomorra.  
 V. No le parece a v. m. que es buena vida estar hechos heremitas en este desierto, que mas hizieron los padres de el yermo?

P. Y

M. Let us see the wine that is so good.  
 H. The wine is such, that it is sufficient to bring a man to heaven that shall use to drinke it.  
 P. What now Mistrresse, is it not enough to be a keeper of an Inne, except you be an heretike too?  
 H. That which I say is true, and I will proue it, that good wine carrieth men up to heauen.  
 M. How so?  
 H. Good wine makes good blood, good blood doth engender good condition, good condition doth end in good workes, good workes carry men to heauen.  
 M. She hath proued her intent very sufficiently.  
 A. But this cannot bee verified in this wine.  
 H. Why?  
 A. Because this seemes rather vinegar and water.  
 H. Water, by the life of my soule, it hath no more water in it, than he from aboue put in it.  
 M. God neuer came to put water into wine, but without water he created it.  
 P. Well, you vnderstand not the matter a right. He from aboue is his husband, which is in the top of the house, and from thence puts water into the wine with a long tunnell.  
 A. I will dye and line with thee Peter for thou knowest fashions.  
 M. I vnderstood that she had called God, him that was from aboue.  
 A. In euery thing there is deceit.  
 P. Except it be in an old garment.  
 H. Truly they haue reason, for the world is very bad, for this cause haue my husband and I withdrawn our selues into this Inne, to make an end in good life.  
 M. Call you this a good life Hostesse?  
 P. Yea Sir, for that of Sodom and Gomorra was worse.  
 H. Doe you not thinke that it is a good life to be made Hermits in this desert, what did the Fathers in the Wildernesse more than this?

P. And

P. Ytan virtuosos, que de limónsna, a quantos pailan les quitan lo que llévan.

V. Quitar, nunca Dios tal quiera, recibir lo que nos dan con cortesía, esto si.

P. Es el caso, que llaman cortesía a la ganancia, con que abren las vi-casas.

V. El diablo truxo a este moço a mi casa, veie con todos los diábolos, espíritu de contradición.

P. \* Mal me quieren mis comadres, por que les digo las verdades.

M. Aora Pedro, haze quenta con la huéspededa, y vamos de aqui, que es tarde.

P. Que se deve de todo huéspededa?

V. Elpérese, contare, dos de paja, y de paja dos, tres de cebada, cinco de vino, vno de carne y dos de tocino, veynte reales en todo.

P. \* Quénta hecha, mula muerta, escudero yos a pie, pues ami me quiere dar papilla señora huéspededa, \* no save, que quando ella nació, ya yo comia pan con cortésia: espere haré yo la mia.

V. Haze, veámos.

P. \* Tres y dos son cinco, dos de blanco y tres de tinto, y otros tres de estópas y pez, vno de la olla y dos de la cholla, y medio de la cebolla, ocho son en todos.

V. Malos años para vos, págame aqui, si no, por el siglo de mi padre que os arañe élla cara.

P. \* Quitádo se ha el gato la ropa de la ypocrasia, señora hermitaña, tenga paciència y no tanta codicia.

V. \* No me quente mortuorios, si no pague me, si no, las bárbas le sacaré vna a vna.

M. Dale, lo que pidiere, la huéspededa Pedro no riñas con ella.

P. En vna nao cargada de plata, no ay harto para contentarla.

V. No pido si no lo justo, paga me hermano

P. And so holy that of purealmes, of as many as passe they take away that they carrie.

H. Take away, God forbid, receive that they giue vs with curtesie that wee doe.

P. Thus it is, they call the picklocke curtesie, with which they open the mailes.

M. The deuill brought this seruant to my house, get thee hence in the deuils name, thou spirit of contradiction.

P. My gossip cannot abide me, because I speake truth vnto them truly.

M. Now Peter reckon with the hostesse and let vs be gone hence, for it is late.

P. Hostesse what is owing in the whole?

H. Taria I little, I will reckon, two of straw, and of straw two, three of barley, five of wine, one of flesh, and two of bacon, ten shillings in the whole.

P. The reckoning made, the mule dead, seruing man get your way a foot why the mistresse hostesse will giue me pap, doth she not know, that when she was borne, then did I eat bread with hardernst, carrie lle make my reckoning.

H. Make it, doe vs see.

P. Three and two are five, two of sacke, & three of wine somewhat blacke, and other three of the burdes of flax and pitch, one of the pot, and two of the \* nowle, and a halfe of the chibbowle, they are eight in the whole.

\* The binder part of the head.

H. What with a mischiefe to you, pay wee heere, if not, by my fathers soule Ile put out thine eies.

P. The cat hath cast off the \* garment of hypocrisie, mistris Hermite haue patience, and be not so conetous.

\* The cat faiming hir selfe a Hermite, put on a Hermits weed and many beastes and creatures came to hir for ghostly counsell, at last came the mice, which when she spied, flung off the garment and to them.

H. Doe not reckon up mortuaries vnto me, but pay me, if not I will pull off the haire of thy beard one by one.

M. Giue that which the Hostesse doth require Peter & braule not with hir.

P. In a ship loaden with silver there is not enough to content hir.

H. I require nothing but my right, pay me brother



\* All in one song.

P. Anfi dize la picáza, tome señóra ve ay dóze reales, los seis son de buéno, y los seis de mal provécho le hágan.

V. Mas no, si no los seis, son de bien venidos séan, y los says de en óra mala váys.

P. \* Maldiciones de putas viejas, oraciones son de salud.

M. Quéde se con Dios Señóra huésped.

V. El váya con vuestras mercedes, a qui está ésta pobre posada para todas las vézes que viniéren este camino, les suplico se sirvan délla.

\* i. Their money.

P. \* Sobre buen haz de pája tía.

V. No, sino por sus ojos bellidos lo harán.

P. Quede con dios tía, y el la haga buena hermitaña.

V. Anda con dios hijo, y el os haga mejor de lo que soys.

Diálogo quinto, entre tres Pájes, llamados el uno Iuan, el otro Francisco, el otro Guzman, en el qual se contienen, las ordinarias pláticas que los Pájes suelen tener unos con otros.

I. D E donde vienes Francisco?

F. De la corte Iuan.

I. Que ay por allá de nuevo?

E. El rollo se está adonde solía, el Rey ha mandado que quien tuviere que comer, que come, y el otro que ayúne.

I. Viste a la Réyna?

F. A la de diamantes con que hizo el postrer flux.

I. Luego jugado has.

F. Yo no, mis dineros jugaron al trocádo, y trocaron me por otro dueño.

I. Ganáste o perdiste?

F. Gané

brother and leane off words.

P. So saith the \* chattering Pie, hold mistres, see here six shillings, three of them be much good doe it you with them, and the other three the diuell choake you with them.

H. Not so, but the one three are of welcome unto me, and the other three the diuell goe with thee.

P. Cursings of old whoores are prayers of health.

M. God be with you mistres hostesse.

H. God conduct your Worships, here is this poore Inne, for as often as you shall come this way, I entreat you to use it at your command.

P. \* Aunt you doe it upon a good sheafe of straw.

H. No, but onely for your faire lookes Sir.

P. Aunt, God be with you, and make you a good Hermite.

H. Farewell sonne, and God make thee better than that thou art.

The fift Dialogue, betweene three Pages, called the one of them Iohn, the other Frances, the other Guzman, wherein are contained the ordinary speeches which Pages are wont to haue one with the other.

I. From whence come you Frances?

F. From the Court Iohn.

I. What is the newes there?

F. The gallows is where it was wont to be, the King hath commanded that he that hath any thing to dinner, that he eat it; and he that hath not that he fast.

I. Have you seene the Queene?

F. The Queene of Diamonds with which I made the last flush.

I. Hast thou now beene at gaming?

F. Not I, my money plaied at exchange, and changed me for another master.

I. Hast thou won or lost?

F. I

- F. Gané y perdí.  
 I. Como pudo ser?  
 F. Perdí mis dineros, y gané escarmiento para no jugar mas.  
 I. No sería pérdida la del dinero, si tu llevasses adelante esse propósito, pero yo digo, que quien hizo, hará.  
 F. A lo menos mientras me durare el Escozor, no jugaré mas.  
 I. Esse no te durare mas que hasta llegar de aquí a tu casa, o hasta que tengas mas dineros.  
 F. Pues yo para que quiero el dinero, tengo de comprar casas, o viñas con ello.  
 I. Para embiár a tus parientes, o para luzirte con ello.  
 F. Luzirme o que? malos años, Luzgame el puto de mi amo pues le sirve de mi.  
 I. Pues piensas que te ha de durar tu amo toda la vida?  
 F. Dure lo que durare, como cuchar de pan, que quando éste me falte, no faltará otro tan ruyn como el.  
 I. Y quando seas gran de?  
 F. Estonces ya sabemos el paradero de los pajes, o ala guerra, o a un monasterio, o a la horca.  
 I. Eso postero lo le renuncio en ti.  
 F. Pues pensais vos esca páros por ypocrita?  
 I. Hermáno, en mi linaje nunca úvo ningun ahorcado, no quiero estrenarlo yo.  
 F. Estrenada os daran la foga, no os pensays por esso.  
 I. Pienso el ladrón que todós son de su condición, yo hermano no pienso hazer obras por donde la merezca.  
 F. Pues no as oydo dezir, que el pensar no es saber, esso sin pensar se verná antes que vn colongia.  
 I. Yo bien créo, que si yo trato mucho contigo, que tu me procurerás pegar la tiña, porque vn puerco

- F. I have won, and I have lost.  
 I. How could that be?  
 F. I lost my money, and got a warning to play no more.  
 I. The losse of money should bee no losse, if thou didst goe forward in this purpose, but I say, that he that hath once plaied will play againe.  
 F. At the least, while the smarting shall last I will play no more.  
 I. That will not last with thee longer, than till thou comest home, or untill thou hast more money.  
 F. What should I doe with money, am I to buy houses or vineyards with it?  
 I. To send it to thy friends and kindred, or to make thy selfe trim with it.  
 F. To make my selfe trim? a plague take it, let the Buggerer my Master trim me seeing he serves himselfe of me.  
 I. Why thinkest thou thy master is to live with thee for ever?  
 F. Let him last as long as a spoone of bread, when he is wanting to me, there will not faile another as bad as hee.  
 I. And when thou art better grown in yeares?  
 F. Then we know the end of Pages, either to the warre, or to a monasterie, or to the gallows.  
 I. This last I leave to thee.  
 F. Why thinke you to scape because you are an Hypocrite?  
 I. Brother, in my kindred neuer was there any hanged, I will not hanfell the gallows.  
 F. They will give you a halter for hanfell, take you no care for that.  
 I. Well thinks the theefe, that all are as himselfe, I brother doe not thinke to doe any thing that I may deserve the gallows.  
 F. But hast thou not heard say, that opinion is no knowledge, this without thinking will come sooner then a Canonship.  
 I. I well beleue, that if I deale much with thee, thou wilt infect mee with manginess, for one hog that hath wallowed*



puerco encenagado, siempre procura encenagar a otro.

F. Dizes verdad, que si el ladrón anda con el hermitaño, o el ladrón será hermitaño, o el hermitaño ladrón, pero tu nunca juegas?

I. Yo no en mi vida.

F. Pues tente bien no cáygas, porque a fee que si cács, que as de ser como los borrachos que comiencan tarde a ser lo, que por esquivarse de lo que han dexado de beber, nunca salen de cueros.

I. Si Dios me guarde mi juyzio, yo me guardaré desse vicio.

F. Mas fuerte era Troya, y fue destruyda.

I. Dexémos ello agora, y dime como te va con tu amo?

F. A mi muy bien, porque como es moço, galán, y enamorado, son tres cosas que sacan de harón al mas cuerdo, y así todo se nos va en fiestas, vna librea oy, otra mañana, siempre en sarao, músicas, y dancas, siempre en combites, que mal año para Lançarote quando de Bretaña vino, si era tan bien tratado como nosotros.

I. Si pero a fee que creo, que tras buen bocado, dais buen grito.

F. Porque dizes esso?

I. Porque me parece que si vuestro amo dança de la manera, vosotros no aveys de estar ociosos, sino que aveys de capatear, porque en casa del músico, todos los criados son dancantes.

F. Es verdad, que esso a cosadillos nos trae de dia con recaudos, y de noche con rondas, pero con el buen pechebre, todo se passa y no como tu que estás serviendo a vn pelon, que te deve matar de hambre.

I. No mata, porque yo nunca tive vida, despues que estoy con el.

F. Notiéne buen ordinario?

I. La

wallowed in the mire will beray another.

F. Thou sayest true, for if a theefe keepe companie with a hermit, either a theefe shall become a hermit, or a hermit a theefe, but dost thou neuer play?

I. I, neuer in my life.

F. Then hold fast, fall not, for in faith if thou fallest, thou art like to be as drunken men, which beginne at length so to be, which to quit themselves of that they haue left to drinke, they neuer get out of drunkenesse.

I. If God keepe me in my right minde, I will keepe my selfe from this vice.

F. Troy was more strong, and yet was overcome.

I. Let vs leave this now, and tell me how your master and you agree?

F. I like very well of him, for he is young, gallant, and in love, they are three things which busie the wisest man, & so we are altogether in feasting, one livery to day, another to morrow, neuer without good cheere, musicke, dances, and banquets, that the devil take Lançarote when he came from Brittain if he were so well entreated as we are.

I. Yea, but in faith I beleene that after a good morsell, you pay well for it.

F. Why saiest thou so?

I. For I thinke, that if your master dance in such sort, you are not altogether idle, but that you foot it too, for in a musitians house all the servants are dancers.

F. It is true, that by reason of this long small occasions drive us in the day time with letters, and in the night we round the street, but with good fare we passe over all this, and not as thou dost which servest a miserable wretch, which killeth thee with hunger.

I. He kills me not, for I neuer had life since I came to him.

F. Hath he not a good ordinarie table?

I. Wretched.

- I. La lazéria es ordinaria en cása.
- F. Que os da a comer?
- I. Elperanças y folías.
- F. Con ésto estás tan gordo?
- I. De los Tovillos si estoy.
- F. Dalle cantonáda.
- I. Temo de encontrár otro peor, y no querria por huyr de la llama dár en las bráfas.
- F. Haz te cuchillo de melonéro, provár muchos hasta hallár uno bueno.
- I. Luego cobra hombre mala fama, y le \* dizen Piedra movediza no la cobre móho, y todo el mundo le da del cobdo.
- F. No sino dexáos secár como palo en sarmen téra.
- I. Adonde vas tu agora?
- F. A buscár mi ámo, y témo que no le tengo de poder hallár.
- I. Adonde le perdiste?
- F. Yo no le perdí, el se perdió muchas dias ha.
- I. Ansi yrá un perdido a buscár otro perdido, como un duelo busca otro duelo, y una necedad a otra, porque *Paria cum paribus facillime congregantur.*
- F. Bendito sea Dios, que por tres blancas de gramática que estudió, ya no se cabe en el cuérpo, y no vé la ora que desembuchár lo.
- I. Digo hermano, que cada obéja con su paréja, y vn semijante busca a otro.
- F. Ansi tu ámo como es miserable pelón, busca vn ypócrita como tu, a quien con dezille que es menester ayunár para yr al cié- lo, te tiene en diéta perpétua, y canoniza por virtud, lo que es miséria fina.
- I. No tienes razón, que el no es avarién- to, però como dizen Pobréza no es viléza.
- F. No, mas es maestra que enseña como se ha de hazér.
- I. Yo se, que si mi ámo tuviére la rénta del

- I. *Wretchednesse it selfe is his ordinary promission in house.*
- F. *What diet doth he giue you?*
- I. *Hopes and songs.*
- F. *And with this art thou so fat?*
- I. *If I be fat, it is in my ankle bones.*
- F. *Run away from him.*
- I. *I am afraid to meet with a worse, and I would not leape out of the frying pan, and fall into the fire.*
- F. *Make of thy selfe a knife to cut pumpi- ens, proue many untill you finde one good.*
- I. *Straightway a man gets an ill name, and they say a rolling stone gathereth no mosse, and every one misleth him aside.*
- F. *No but suffer your selfe to dry as stickes on a pile or heape.*
- I. *Whither goest thou now?*
- F. *To seeke my master, and I feare that I shall not finde him.*
- I. *Where didst thou lose him?*
- F. *I lost him not, hee lost himselfe a great while agoe.*
- I. *So one that is lost himselfe, goeth to seeke another that is lost, as one grieffe seekes another grieffe, and one folly another: for like will to like.*
- F. *God be blessed, that for \* three blankes of Grammer which he hath studi- ed, now he cannot keepe it in his belly, and he thinks every houre ten, till he hath vttered his whole minde.*
- I. *I say brother, every sheepe with his e- quall, and like will to like.*
- F. *So thy master as he is a miserable wretch seeks out an hypocrite like thy selfe, and by telling thee how requisite it is to fast for the winning of heauen doth hold thee in continuall diet, and extols that for a vertue, which is pure miserablenesse.*
- I. *You say not well, for he is not couetous, but as it is said, Ponertie is not wilnesse.*
- F. *No, but it is a mistress which doth teach vs how we should becomeiggardly.*
- I. *I know, if my master had reuenues as thy*

\* A blanke halfe a Maravedi, a Maravedi 34. of them to six pence.



del tuyo que gastára mas que el, lo qual el nos dize que hará muy complidaménte si dios le mejóra d'cítado.

F. De manéra que éssas son las esperanças que coméis.

I. Mas vale que agua, como dezía la véja que mojáva el sarmiéto en el rio y le chupáva.

F. Con esta comida no dubdo dexéis de salir buénos girifáltes al cabo del año.

I. Si però, si bolamostan alto, llevárnos ha el viento, como haze a todos los que se sustentan de semejante manjar.

F. Por vida de tu madre, que renta tiéne tú ámo?

I. Yo tçlo diré, vn quento de mentíras, y otro de neçesidádes, y vn millón de neçedádes, y todo ésto se gasta cada año, de fuerre, que viene a salir a raça por cantidad.

F. Quantos cavállos tiene?

I. Dize que cinco con quatro que se le an muerto.

F. Quantos criados?

I. Nónes son, y no llégan a tres,

F. De fuerre que tu solo le sirves.

I. Y aun me podrían açotár por vagamúndo.

F. Pues como siendo solo, no tiénes mucho en que entender.

I. Si tengo, en contar lástimas y calamidades.

F. Quando tiempo ha que bives con el?

I. Que muéro con el muchos dias ha.

F. Hermáno, hermáno, quien si mude Dios le ayude.

I. Si, mas adonde yrá el buey que no áre, por donde quiera véo cien leguas de mal camíno.

F. Aquí viene Guzmanillo, veámos que nuevas trae, a Guzman que ay de nuevo?

G. Muchas cosas, el Turco (dizen que) se ha tornado Moro que Venécia nada en agua, y que Yrália está llena de hombres, que en Frán-

cia

master hath, that he would spend more then he doth, which he telleth us he will performe with the best, if it please God to better his estate.

F. So then these bee the hopes which you feed on.

I. It is better then water, as the old woman said, which dipped a dry stick in the river and sucked it.

F. With this dyet I doubt not but at the yeeres end you may prone good \* Gersfalcons to flie.

I. Yea but if we flie so high, the wind will carrie us away, as it doth all those which doe feed on such diet.

F. By the life of thy mother, what revenue hath thy master?

I. I will tell thee, a thousand thousands of lies, and another of needs, a million of fooleries, and all this is spent every yeare in such sort, that hee spends as much as comes in to him.

F. How many horses hath he?

I. He saith five, with those foure which are dead.

F. How many servants?

I. They are odds, and yet they mount not to three.

F. So then thou alone servest him.

I. \* And yet might they whip me for a vagabond.

F. How so, seeing thou art alone, thou hast not much to imploy thy selfe on.

I. But I have much to do to reckon griefes and calamities.

F. How long hast thou lived with him?

I. I have been \* dying with him long since.

F. Brother, brother, God wil him help, that seeks for it himselfe.

I. Yea, but where shall the ox goe that he shall not labour, which way soever I see a hundred leagues of ill way.

F. Here comes little Guzman, let us see what newes he brings. How Guzman, what newes?

G. Many things, the Turke (as they say) is become a Moore or Infidell, \* Venice swims in water, and Italy is full of people, and that in France there

\* i. With this dyet you may be light enough to flie.

\* i. In going up and downe shifting for my selfe, and not living on my master.

\* i. Of hunger.

\* i. Stands built upon the sea, the sea compassing it round about.

*Diálogos.*

cia ay mas de cien mil hombres de guerra, y tambien se dice de secreto que el conde de Flandes a dormido con la Reyna de España.

- F. Todo esto ay de nuevo?
- G. Aora viniéron con este correo éstas nuevas.
- F. De luengas vías luengas mentiras suelen venir.
- G. Lo que yo os he dicho, todo es tan verdad, como ser aora de día.
- F. Luego grandes guerras se aparéjan éste veráno.
- G. Los pronósticos dízen, quèste veráno los que biviéren, verán grandes maravillas.
- F. Que maravillas serán, cuenta nos las.
- G. Dízen que el sol será mayor que toda la tierra.
- F. Santo Dios, y esto ha de sér verdad?
- G. Y que la luna cada noche aparéce de su manera, que las estrellas sino fuisse por el sol no ternán resplandór ninguno, que los ríos corren a la mar, que arderán muchos montes, que avrá grande mortandád de todo género de ganados, y en todas las ciudádas avrá unos monstros que echarán llamas por la boca, y los hombres que no comieron lo que éstos vomitáren, morirán.
- F. Vale me Dios, yo pienso que todo esto es mentira.
- G. Los Pronósticos dízen, que el sol y la luna faltarán, antes que todas éstas cosas falten.
- F. Dessa manera, todos los hombres morirán, porque quien ha de comer lo que vomitáren los monstros?
- G. Pues os tu comido vn asno entéro, y no comerás de aquello?
- F. Si yo soy asno, vos soys mula.
- G. Xo que te estriégo que lárgas le nacieron a v. m.
- F. Tan lárgas como sus narizes.
- G. Va a véra tu tíá Hermáno?
- F. No qué ya ví a tu madre, en la pel-lejería.

*Dialogues.*

43

there are more then a hundred thousand men of armes, and also they say in secret, that the \* Earle of Flanders hath lien with the Queene of Spaine.

\* The King of Spaine in his title Earle of Flanders.

- F. Is there all this newes?
- G. These newes came now with this post.
- F. Farre fetched lies come from farre.
- G. That which I have told you is as true as it is now day light.
- F. Then great warres are like to bee this Summer.
- G. The Prognostications say, those that shall live this Summer shall see great wonders.
- F. What shall those wonders be, I pray thee tell them vs.
- G. They say the Sunne shall be bigger then all the earth.
- F. Blessed God, and will this prove true?
- G. And that the Moone every night doth appeare after his old fashion, that the \* Stars if it were not for the Sunne, should have no light, that all rivers runne into the sea, that many \* mountaines shall burne, that there shall be a great slaughter of all kinde of \* cattell, and in all cities there shall be Monsters which shall cast \* out fire at the mouth, and those men which shall not eat that which these monsters shall vomit, they die.
- F. God help me, I thinke all this to be a lye.
- G. The Prognostications say, that the Sun and the Moone shall faile of their courses, rather then these things to faile.
- F. By this meanes, all men shall die, for who can eat that which these monsters shall vomit?
- G. Why hast thou swallowed downe an \* asse whole, and wilt not eat of it?
- F. If I be an asse, thou art a mule.
- G. \* Ho I do rub thee, for they are sprung up very \* long to your Worship.
- F. So long as your nose.
- G. Goe you to see your aunt brother?
- F. Not so, for I saw thy mother in a brothel-house.

\* i. Starres receive their light of the Sunne. As mount Aetna in Sicilie and others which continually cast out fire and brimstone, &c. \* For mans meat to eat. \* i. Ounces where in they bake bread

\* Made a gull. \* Hoe, a voice that carters use to make their horses stand still. \* i. Long eares, calling him there by asse. \* Calling of him by this a lye, which for the most part have long noses.



\* Ha & Ralli-  
me, then it is  
Grate me, and  
Harra allá, then  
it is haight that  
way, as one saith  
to an asse.

- lejería.  
G. \* Harrallame esse queso.  
F. Harrallame esse asno.  
G. Toda la vida has de comer sin pláto?  
F. Toda la vida has de comer tu cabrón?  
G. O Dios te bendiga la bella alimaña.  
F. O Dios te despache deste mundo para el otro.  
G. Dizen me que es v. m. gran comedór de huévos allados.  
F. Tambien me han dicho a mi que v. m. come muy bien bacalao.  
G. O si todos los ásnos truxeran albardas, que buen oficio era el, de los albardéros.  
F. Si ello fuere así, vna mas tenía de costa vuestro ámo cada mês.  
G. Si del nécio se uviéra de pagar alcavala, quanto ganáran los Alcavaléros con v. m?  
F. En élla hazienda nádie podriá tratár, porque dizque es patrimonio de v. m.  
Q. Todo es de vn pedáço v. m.  
F. Si, pero es de aguijón para picár a v. m.  
G. Mas no créo que es sino de atun de yjada.  
F. Si de atun fuéra ya v. m. uviéra arre- metido a la pieça, como el asno a la cevada.  
G. Parece me hermano que aunque tu entráste en la corte, nunca la corte entró en ti.  
F. En la de los puércos concédo, porque como es tu jurisdicción, no se háze en ella, sino lo que tu ordenas.  
G. Por vida tuya que me digas, quantos cursos tienes de nécio.  
F. Los mismos que vos de majadéro.  
G. Yo pienso, que éras ya doctór en ynsensato.  
F. Y vos estáys graduádo por cavalleriza.  
G. A Dios hermano, y roe bien éssos grançones.

F. Y

house.

- G. Grate me this cheese.  
F. Haight that way this asse.  
G. What art thou to eat thy meat all thy life without a platter?  
F. Art thou to eat all thy life of Goats flesh?  
G. O God blesse thee faire beast.  
F. O God rid thee out of this world into the other.  
G. They tell me that you are a great eater of hard egges.  
F. Also they tell me that you eat very well poore Iohn.  
G. O if all asses should carrie pack-saddles, what a good trade should the pack-sadler have.  
F. If it were so, your master should bee at the charge of one packs-saddle more euery moneth.  
G. If there should bee subsidie gathered up of euery foole, how much would the gatherers of the subsidies put into their purse with your Worship?  
F. In this good; none could meddle, because it is said it is your patrimony.  
G. All your Worship is one peece.  
F. Yea, but it is a prick to spurre you forward.  
G. But I beleene it not but that it is a peece of a Tunnie fish of the belly side.  
F. If it were of a Tunnie fish, you had set upon a peece of it as greedily as an asse on the prouender.  
G. It seemes to me brother, although thou entredst into the Court, the Court neuer entred vnto thee.  
F. In that of hogs I grant, for as it is thy iurisdiction, there is nothing done therein but that thou doest appoint.  
G. I pray thee tell me how many degrees of a foole hast thou?  
F. As many as thou hast of a ioult head.  
G. I thinke thou wast Doctor in sencelesse- nesse.  
F. And you taken degree in the stable.  
G. Farewell Brother, and gnaw well these bukkes.

F. And

- F. Y rumiád vos como buen cabrón esótro.
- I. Par diez, bueno te ha parado el amigo.
- F. Amigo será el de v'na raça de vino.
- I. Este es de los que aconsejáva el óllo, que hiziéllenos poco caso.
- F. Como es esse quento?
- I. Quenta Ysopo, que vna vez dos amigos ván caminando a pie, por vn monte, y salió a ellos vn óllo, el vno echando mano a su espada, se quisso defendér a sí y a su compañero, al qual dixo que hiziéllse lo mismo, para que ni el vno ni el otro muriéllse: el compañero que tenía mas cuenta con su salud, que con el del otro, atrevióse ántes a sus pies, que a sus manos, y no curando del compañero, dio a huyr a vn árbol alto que allí vido, y le subió en el, donde estuvo seguro del peligro. El compañero visto que el solo no se podía defenderse del óllo, se dexó caer en tierra haciendo muestras de que estava muerto, tenía el huego y no resolláva mientras el óllo llegó y le olió todo, las narizes y la boca, y los cydos, y pensando que estava muerto, se fue de allí, sin hazérle ningun daño. El que estava en el árbol, visto que el óllo era ydo, baxó del, y preguntó a su compañero, que era aquello que el óllo le avía dicho al cydo: El otro respondió, dezíame que con tan ruynes compañeros como vos nunca hiziéllse camino otra vez.
- F. Respondió muy discretamente, y si yo lo supiera ántes, uviéra le contado esse quento a estotro mierda en palillo, que piensa que sabe mas que Bartulo ni Baldo.
- I. Por cierto el tivo demasiada razón, amoretarte de nécio pues estuviste

- F. And bronse you as a good he-goat these others.
- I. By ten, thy friend hath brought thee to a good passe.
- F. Hewill rather prone a friend to a cup of wine.
- I. This is such a friend that the Bears counselled that we should make but little reckoning of.
- F. How is that tale?
- I. Asope tells, that on a time two friends travelled a foot together, and going by a wood, a Beare came out to them, the one laying hand on his sword meant to defend himselfe & his companion, whom he willed that he should doe the like, that neither one of them nor the other might not miscarrie: his companion which made more account of his owne safetie then his fellower, was more bold upon his feet then upon his hands, and not respecting his fellow, betooke himselfe to fly to a high tree which there he saw, and climed up the same, where he was safe from the danger. His companion seeing that alone he could not defend himselfe from the Beare, cast himselfe down on the ground, making shewes that he was dead, he held his breath and did not once blow while the beare came & smelt him round, his nose and his mouth, and his eares, thinking he had been dead went his way without doing him any harme. Hee that was in the tree, seeing that the Beare was gone, came downe the tree, and asked his fellow what was that that the Beare had told him in his eare: The other answered, he told me that with such bad companions as your selfe I never should travell againe.
- F. He answered very well, and if I had knowne it before, I would have told this tale to this turd upon a stick, which thinks he knowes more than Bartulus or Baldus.
- I. Truly he had too too much cause to scoffe at thee for a foole, seeing thou



viste tan torpe que no entendiste sus pronósticos y adivinanzas.

F. Pues tu entiendes las mejor?

I. Yo entiendo las como el las dixo.

F. Pues yo bien créo que entiendo Romance, y el en Romance hablaba que no en algaravía.

I. Pues quieres vér como debáxo del sayál ay al : y que aun que te habló en Español, es algaravía de allende para ti.

F. Yalo desléo vér como es.

I. Pues lo priméro que dixo que el Turco se ha tornado móro, es lo el de profesión y de ley, y fuelo siempre : todos siguen la seta de Mahóma. Que Venécia náda en águá, es verdad que está fundada en la mar, que Ytalia está llena de hombres, tambien es verdad como Ynglaterra lo está, Tambien que en Fráncia, ay mas de cien mil hombres de guerra, quien no lo sabe que quando el Rey quiera, podrá sacar della mas de dozientos mil.

F. Todo ésto bien lo entiendo yo, pero lo de más, como se puede entender, que el conde de Flandes aya dormido con la Réyna de España y no se anda el mundo en guerras.

I. Pues bobo no sabes tu, que el conde de Flandes y el Rey Despaña es todo una própria persona.

F. Juro a tal, que tiene razón, que no avia yo caydo en ello.

I. Pues lo demas que dize que el sol es mayor que toda la tierra, es muy gran verdad, segun demonstraciones Astrológicas, que yo con saber poco te las pudiéra dár a entender, si uviéra lugar. Que la luna aparecérá cada noche de su manera, esso tu lo véas cada dia con sus crescientes y menguanres, nunca está una noche, como estúvo otra : pues que arderán muchos mórtes, tambien es verdad, que ay en el mundo muchos que

thou wert so dull that thou understoodst not his prognostications and divinings.

F. Doest thou then understand them better?

I. I understand them as he spake them.

F. But I beleene well that I understand Spanish, and he spake in Spanish and not in the Moores tongue.

I. But wilt thou see, how under course attire, is some wisdom, and although he spake Spanish it is the Moores tongue to thee.

F. I desire to see how it is.

I. The first then that he said, that the Turke is become a Moore or an Infidell, he is so by his profession and law, and alwaies hath bene: all follow the sect of Mahomet. That Venice doth swim in water, it is true, for it is built in the sea: that Italy is full of men, also it is true as England is: also that in France are more than a hundred thousand men of armes, who knowes it not, that when the King will, he may draw out thereof more than two hundred thousand.

F. All this I understand well, but the rest how is it to be understood, that the Earle of Flanders hath lien with the Queene of Spaine, and the world not to be up in armes.

I. Why foole dost not know, that the Earle of Flanders and the King of Spaine is all one person.

F. I swear by such a one, hee saith true, that I did not light vpon.

I. But the rest, which he saith, that the sun is bigger then the whole earth, is very true, according to astrological demonstrations, which I in knowing but a little could easily make thee understand, if there were time and place, that the Moone will appeare as it was wont, that thou seest continually with her waxing and waning, she is neuer one night as she was the other night: then that many mountaines shall burne, also it is true, for there be many

que llaman Bolcánes, como el de Sicilia, que siempre está ardiendo. Que morirá mucho ganado, quien lo ygnóra que lo han de matár los hombres para comér.

F. Todo esso entiendo bien, pero á quello de aquellos monstros, que echarán llamas por la boca, y que hémos de comér lo que ellos vomitáren, no puedo y pensar que sea.

I. Esso es mas fácil que esótro, porque aquellos monstros, son los hornos ado se cueze el pan, que échan llamas, y por la boca vomitan el pán que comémos.

F. Ahora digo que tienes razón, y que yo estava en bábía, y que puede vn nécio con vna necesidad forjada en su ymaginación dar en que entender á cien sábios.

I. Allí le á aconteció al poeta Oméro, que como con la vjéz estuviése ciégo y se anduviése passeando por la orilla de la már, y oyó hablar á ceirtos pescadores, que en aquel punto se estavan espulgando, y como les preguntasse que pesca hazían, ellos entendiéndo por los piojos, respondieron, los que tenemos buscámos, y los que no tenemos hallámos, pues como el buen Oméro no viése lo que ellos hazían, y por esta causa no entendiése la Enígma, fue tanto lo que fatigó su ymaginación y entendimiento, por entender la y alcançár el secreto dello, que fue bastante ésta pesadumbre á hazer le morir.

F. El lo hizo no como sabio, sino como muy gran nécio, en martarse por lo, que no podía alcançár.

I. Yo bien créo que no morirás tu desse acháque.

F. No hermano, que no páre ya mi madre, y yo conténto me con lo que buenamente y sin mucho trabajo

many in the world, as mount Aetna in Sicilie, which alwaies burnes, &c. that there shall bee a great slaughter of cattell who is ignorant thereof, for men are to kill them for to eat them.

F. All this I vnderstand well, but that of those monsters, which shall cast out flames out of their monthes, and that we shall eat of that they shall vomit, I cannot thinke what it may be.

I. This is more easie than the other, for those monsters are ovens, where they bake bread which cast out fire, and by the mouth of it, it vomiteth the bread which we eat.

F. Now I say you say true, and that I was in foolerie, and that a foole with his foolishnesse framed in his owne imagination may giue to a hundred wise men matter to picke out.

I. So it hapned to the Poet Homer, that as he was with age blinde, and went walking by the sea shoare, & heard certaine Fishermen talking, that at that time were a lousing themselves, and as he asked them, what fish they caught they vnderstanding that he had meant their lice, they answered, Those that we \* haue, we seeke for, and those that we \* haue not wee finde, but as the good Homer could not see what they did, and for this cause could not vnderstand the riddle, it did so grieue his vnderstanding to obtaine the secret of this matter, which was a sufficient grieue to cause his death.

\* i. Haue in their clothes, i. lice.

\* i. Haue not in hand.

F. He did that not as a wise man, but as a very great foole, in casting away himselfe for that he could not reach vnto.

I. I well beleene thou wouldst not die for such a matter.

F. No brother, for my mother is past childe bearing, and I content my selfe with that I may well and without much



trabájo puedo alcançar.

I. \* Pues quien no es mas de otro, no meréce mas que otro, y quien no fáve no vále, y quien ruyn es en su villa, ruyn es en Sevilla, y quien adelante no mira atras se hálala.

F. Yo hermano, quiero andar por do anda el buey, y asentár el piellano, no tomár de las cosas mas de aquéllo que me diéron, y porque quiero del mundo gozár, quiero cyr, y vér y callár.

Diálogo sexto, que passó entre dos amigos Ingleses y dos Españóles, que se juntáron en la lónja de Lóndres, en el qual, se trátan muchas cosas curiosas, y de guísto, son los Ingleses Egidio y Guillérmo, los Españóles Diego y Alonso.

E. **Q**ue hazéis Guillermo?

G. Ya lo véis Egidio.

E. Como estáys tan ocioso?

G. \* Quia nemo me conducit.

E. Pues yo os conbido aun ráto de buena conversación.

G. Adónde?

E. Venid os conmigo, no yréys adonde yo os llevare?

G. Si me lo dezís priméro, por que yr hombre, sin favér adonde, sería neçedád.

E. Luego no hazéis confíança de mi?

G. Si hágo, mas no sabéis que no todos los umóres son unos, y que podrá ser, lo que a vos os da guísto, enfadar me a mi.

E. Si, però yo conózco ya vuestro umór, y me acomódo con el.

G. Con todo ésto, dezídme adonde me lleváys.

E. Vámos a la lónja, adonde me están esperando dos amigos Españóles, muy discretos, gustaréis de su buena conversacion.

G. Háblan

much labour reach unto.

I. But hee that is not more then another, doth deserve no more then another, and he that hath not knowledge, is of no worth, and hee that in his owne towne is vile, and is also bad and naught in Senile, and he that looks not before he leape, may fall into the ditch.

F. Brother, I will goe where the ox hath troden, and set downe my foot soft and faire, not to take more matters then that they shall give me, and because I will live in rest, I will heare and see and hold my peace.

The sixth Dialogue which passed between two friends Englishmen, and two Spaniards, which met upon the Exchange in London: wherein are handled many curious matters, and delightfull: the Englishmen are named Giles and William, the Spaniards James and Alonso.

G. **W**hat doe you William?

W. You enquire for Giles.

G. Why are you so idle?

W. Because no man hath hired mee.

G. Then I invite you for a while into good company.

W. Whither?

G. Come with me, will you not goe whither I shall leade you?

W. If you tell me first, for it were folly for a man to goe hee knowes not whither.

G. Doe you not now trust me?

W. Yes I do trust you, but do you not know, that all humours are not one, and it may be, that which likes you may very much displease me.

G. Tea, but I know your humour, and I doe apply my selfe unto it.

W. But for all this, tell me whither you carrie me.

G. Let us goe to the Exchange where two Spaniards very discreet men my friends are tarrying for mee, you shall have a taste of their good conversation.

W. Speake

- G. Hablan ynglés?
- E. Vn poquito, però pues vos entendéis bien el Español, y yo tanbien no ympórta.
- G. Huelgo me de yr, aunque no séa, mas de por aprender algunas buenas frásis Españólas.
- E. Eílas sé yo que las tiénen buenas, porque son de Tolédo donde es la prima de la lengua Españóla.
- G. Son por ventúra. aquéllos, que se ándan allí passeádo.
- E. Los própios, vámos allá, Dios guarde a vuestras mercedes.
- D. Y venga con vuestras mercedes.
- E. Passe adelante la conversación de que se tratáva aóra.
- D. No pareze sino que la entendístes, que respondístes a élla sin daros el pie.
- A. Tratávamos de las salutations, que se úsan en *Ynglaterra*, y de las que se úsan in España.
- G. Quales son mejores?
- A. Cierro en esto, adonde quiera, ay abúsos, quando dize el Español Dios os guarde, en ora buena estéys, Dios os de salud, y el Yngles buenas tardes y óras semejantes yo apruévola por buena salutación.
- G. Pues el mundo la repruéva, y tienen por tóscos a los que la úsan.
- A. Y aun por esso se dize, que anda el mundo a el rebéz, y no ay mejor señal de que ello es buéno, de vér que el mundo lo repruéba.
- G. De las demas salutations que os parece?
- A. De las de mas digo, que quando el Yngles pregunta a el otro, como estáys, dize una gran neçedád, y quando el Español dize béto os las manos, dize una gran mentira.
- G. Menester es que déys razón, de vuestra nueva opinión.
- A. Aóra dezime por vuestra vida, no os parece neçedad a el que vos veys buéno preguntár le como está?
- G. Tency

- W. *Speak they English?*
- G. *A very little, but seeing you vnderstand well the Spanish and I also, it makes no matter.*
- W. *I am glad to goe, though it be but to learne some good Spanish phrases.*
- G. *Those I know they haue and good ones, because they are of Tolédo where is the prime of the Spanish tongue.*
- W. *They are peradventure those which goe there walking.*
- G. *The very same, let vs goe meet them, God saue your Worships.*
- I. *And welcome in Gods name.*
- G. *Proceed in that conference which passed betwixt you.*
- I. *It seemes that you vnderstood it, that you made answer to it without giuing \* you the qu.*
- A. *We entreated of the salutations which are used in England, and of those which are used in Spaine.*
- W. *Which are better?*
- A. *Tynly in that matter, there are abuses on both parts, when the Spaniard saith God keepe you, a good houre haue you, God giue you health: and the Englishman God den, or good euen; and the other like, I allow it for good salutation.*
- W. *But generally it is disallowed, and they hold them rude that vse it.*
- A. *And therefore it is said, the world goes quite contrary, and there is no better signe that it is good, than to see it disallowed in the world.*
- W. *And of the other salutations, what thinke you?*
- A. *Of the rest I say, that when the Englishman doth aske the other, how \* he doth, he vters his owne simplicitie, and when the Spaniard saith, I kisse your hands, he telleth a great lye.*
- W. *You must giue a reason of your new opinion.*
- A. *Now tell me I pray you, doth it not seeme vnto you a simplicitie, to aske a man whom you see well, how he doth?*
- G. Tois

\* As in plaies one takes the last word of another's speech, and by that knowes when to speake.

\* The Spaniard alloweth not how doe you, but how doth your worship or mastership.



G. Tenéys razón, pero podría tener algun mal secreto que no se le eche de vér.

A. Estónçes que remedáis vos, con preguntár le como está, No sería mejor, rogár a Dios, que le de salud, como haze el otro?

G. Aóra dezid lo de el Españól.

A. El Españól digo, que dizé mas mentiras entre año en este cáso, que reales da por Dios, porque dezir a el que encuéntra, véso las mãos a v.m. si habla de presente, bien vémos, que miente, pues no se las bésa, si de futuro tambien porque bien sabémos, que quando el otro quisiésc dar se las por muy amigo que fuésc no se las querria el verár.

G. Si pero parece que es vna manera de reconocimíento de superioridad a el que dize.

A. Así es, pero éste reconocimíento no ésta mas que en la lengua por que el refran dize, manos béza hombre que querria vér corcadas.

D. Yo os diré lo que subcedió al propósito, a vn cavalléro viejo Españól, con otro moço y fue, que como el moço por buena criánça, le dixo a el viejo suplico a v.m. me de las mãos, que se las quiero besár el viejo confiado en su anciança, las alargó para que se las besasse, el otro ya arrepentido se las asió con las suyas y con muy buen donáire le dixo senór yo y v. m. a otros dos.

G. El moço anduvo discreto en hazér lo así, y el viejo necio, porque bien savémos, que palábras de buena criánça no obligan.

D. Ansi es verdad, que essa cerimonia de besár la mano, solo la deve el vasallo a el Señor.

A. Esta sola salua guarda tiene nuestra costumbre,

G. You say well, but he may have some inward griefe, which appeareth not outwardly.

A. Then what remedy doe you give him in asking him how he doth, were it not better to pray to God to send him health as the other doth?

W. Now tell that of the Spaniard.

A. The Spaniard I say in this case telleth more lies within the yeare, then he gives sixpences for Gods sake for to say to one, that hee meeteth, I kisse the hands of your Worship, if hee speaks of the time present, we will see that he lieth, seeing he doth not kisse them: if of the time to come, in like manner; for we well know when the other would give him his hands to kisse, if hee were never so great a friend, yet he would not kisse them.

W. Yea but it seemeth that it is a manner of acknowledging of superiority to him, to whom it is spoken.

A. So it is, but this acknowledging is no more, but in the tongue: for the Proverbe saith, A man kisseth those hands that he would see cut off.

I. I will tell you that which hapned for this matter, to an ancient Gentleman, a Spaniard, with another young man; & it was, as the young man for manners sake said to the old man, I entreat your Worship that you will give me your hands, for I will kisse them; the old man presuming upon his yeares, put them out that he might kisse them: the other repenting, took him fast by the hands with his owne hands, and with very good pleasantnesse, said unto him, Sir, I and your Worship against other two.

W. The young man was wise in so doing, and the old man simple, for well we know that words of complement binde not.

I. It is true, this ceremonie of kissing the hand, onely the vassall oweth unto his Lord.

A. This safegard hath our custome, that with

*Diálogos.*

costumbre que con dezir, bésolo a v. m. las manos, parece que es dezir, reconóce a v. m. por mi Señor, y yo por vuestro vasallo.

E. Y que os parece de esta costumbre, que tenemos en Ynglaterra de asír nos las manos vnos otros?

A. Dos manos asidas, siempre fue simbolo de amistad, pero dar los tirones, que aqui se dan vno a otro, tengo lo por poca gravedad, y no sé si diga por liviandad.

E. Antes parece que aquello es por mas confirmación de la amistad.

A. Esta confirmación ha de ser con obras, y no con ademanes ni tirones, quanto mas que deve aver muchos que con la mano asida y tirando, le deven de estar con el corazón marando le.

G. Que dizi de la otra de besár los hombres a las mugéres publicamente.

A. Esta costumbre tuvo su principio en Roma, en el tiempo que ella florecia, aunque se ynvención a diferente propósito de el que agora se úsa.

G. A que fin la ynbentaron?

A. Los Romanos aborrecían tanto el vino en las mugéres, que tenían ley, en que condenava a muerte a la que lo bevia, y porque no lo pudiesen hazer escondidamente, tenían licencia sus parientes de besár la, para que por el olfato conociesen, si lo avia bevído.

G. Si agora se viesen de matár todas las que lo beven, yo veo que quedaríamos sin mugéres.

E. No créo, que fuera muy gran pérdida, segun nos son causa de males.

G. Yo para mí tengo, que la mayor causa de la desolucíon en algunas mugeres de Ynglaterra es esta costumbre de besallos en publico, por que con esto pierden la

*Dialogues.*

51

with saying, I kisse the hands of your worship, it seemes it is to say, I acknowledge your worship for my lord, and my selfe for your vassall.

G. And what is your opinion of this custome, which wee have in England to shake hands one with another?

A. Two hands fastned together, alwaies hath been a token of friendship, but to shake and plucke them, as here they doe one to another, I hold it for small gravitie, and I know not whether I may call it lightnes.

G. Rather it seemeth that it is for the greater confirmation of friendship.

A. This confirmation ought to bee with workes, and not with gestures, nor shaking of the hands, and so much the rather, because there are many which with hand in hand shake hands, and in heart would kill each other.

W. What say you of that custome of kissing betweene men and women, and that openly?

A. This custome first began in Rome, in the time it most flourished, although it were invented for a different purpose then it is now used.

W. For what purpose was it invented?

A. The Romans did so much detest wine in women, that they had a law, in which they did condemne to death that woman which did drinke wine, and because they might not drinke it without being knowne, their kinsfolkes had leave to kisse the women, that they might know by their breath whether they had drunke wine or no.

W. If now they should kill all those women which drinke wine, I see we should be quite without women.

G. I beleene that it were not any great losse, seeing they are cause of many evils unto vs.

W. I hold that the greatest cause of dissolution in some women in England is this custome of kissing publicly, for that by this meanes they lose



la vergüenza y a el tocamiéto del beso, les entra vn veneno que las ynfiçiona.

A. Antes que se yntroduxesse ésta costumbre en Roma, cuenta Tiro Livio, que desterraron de ella a vn senador, persona de mucha quenta, sólo porque besó a su mugér del core de vna hija suya.

G. De vn extremo vinieron a dár en otro extremo.

E. En España no se vsa besár los hombres a las mugéres?

D. Si besau los maridos a sus mugéres, y esto allá detrás de siete paredes, donde aun la luz no los pueda vér.

G. Es por que los Españóles son demasidamente celozos.

A. No, si no, per que lómos tan trabiellósos, que no hémos menestér élse apéto, para hazér mil malos recaudos que sería si tubiessemos élse Ocaçión.

G. Yo créo, que antes causaría hastío, y no andarían los hombres, tan golósos, por que vedamiento es causa del apéto.

A. No es fuego el de la concupiscéncia, que se ahóga, por echarle mucha materia, antes es como la ydropesía, que mientras mas el enfermo béue mas sed tiéne.

D. Especialmente entre los Españóles que por sér de complexión coléricos, está Venus en su punto.

G. Yo entiéndo ésto al contrario, por que Venus consiste mas en vmedad que en calor, por lo qual entiéndo que mas aptos son para semejante exercéto los vmedos de complexión, que los coléricos que con de su naturaléza sécos.

A. Si però la humidád sin calor, sería como la tierra sin el sol, que no es suficiente de míisma a produzír cosa alguna.

D. Por ésse, los poetas, casaron a Venus con Bulcáo Dios de el fuégo.

E. Mas Bulcáo ni Venus sin Ceres y

Baco

lose their shamefastness, and at the very touch of the kisse, there entreteth into them a poison which doth infect them.

A. Before this custome was brought into Rome, Titus Livius telleth, that they banished out of the Citie a Senator, a person of great account, onely because he kissed his wife before one of his owne daughters.

W. They fell from one extremitie into another.

G. In Spaine doe not men use to kisse women?

I. Yes the husbands kisse their wives, but as if it were behinde seven walls, where the very light cannot see them.

W. It is because the Spaniards are too jealous.

A. No not so, but because we are so wanton, that we need nothing to helpe our appetite, to make a thousand ill matches which would fall out if we should have this corruption.

G. I doe rather believe, that it would cause satiety, and that men would not seek to so greedily, because forbidding is cause of desire.

A. The fire of concupiscence, is not such as is extinguished by casting on much matter, but like the droppe, that the more the sick person drinketh the more thirst still he hath.

I. Especially among Spaniards, which are of a cholerick complexion, Venus is in her full force.

G. I take that quite contrary, because Venus consisteth more in moisture than in heat, whereby it seemes to me that the moist of complexion are more apt to such matters, than the cholericks which are by nature drie.

A. Yea but moisture without heat, would be as the earth without the sunne, which is not sufficient of it selfe to bring forth any thing.

I. For this cause the Poets married Venus with Vulcan God of fire.

G. But neither Venus nor Vulcan without Ceres

*Dialogues.*

*Barro no valen vn' caco.*

G. Pues yo para mi congo, que en las tierras mas frías, está mas reconcentrado el calor natural, y por ésto con mayor apénia, en los que biven en las tales regiones.

A. No es esse calor reconcentrado que está en el corazón el que es causa de este fuego, sino el que está en la sangre y partes exteriores.

G. Si però no me negaréis, que el calor de la sangre no procede de el, de el hígado.

A. Assi es verdad, però no obra éste efecto en su origen y fuente, si no quando se ha derramado por las venas, y como la virtud es parzida, es mas flica que quando está vñida, si quando lo esta es acometido el calor de su contrario el frío, y ésto confuérça y vehemencia vénse y resfría de fuerte que no puede obrar ni hazer su efecto.

D. Assi es, y la experiencia de ésto se vee en los cabrones, que es animal luxuriosissimo, y en llevándolo le a tierras frías, o no puede bivar, o pierde mucho de su potencia.

G. Los Faunos o semicápras, que los antiguos llamavan médios dioses cuentan los autores, y poetas, que éran en estrémo luxuriosos.

E. Es verdad, que úvo o ay tales hombres en en mundo llamados faunos?

A. En la vida de Sant Pablo primer hermitaño se cuenta, que en aquel desierto donde el hazia su penitencia, la hazia tambien santo Antonio, el qual como por revelacion supiéle como estava allí cerca san Pablo, le fue avicitar y en el camino encontro con uno, el qual de la cintura para arriba, tenia forma perfecta de hombre, salvo que la cabeza misallena de cornes.

*Dialogues.*

53

*Ceres and Bacchus are worth a cherrie stone.*

*\* Cacao, a fruit in the Indies or a small peece of money there.*

W. But I for my part think, that in countries most cold, the naturall heat is more united in his center, and therefore is there greater desire in those that live in those countries.

A. It is not that heat, which is settled about the heart, which is the cause of this fire, but that which is in the blood and exterior parts.

W. Yea but you will not deny, but that the heat of the blood doth proceed from the heat of the liver.

A. It is true, but it doth not worke this effect in the originall and fountaine, except when it hath spread it selfe by all the veins, and as the vertue dispersed is more feeble then when it is united, so when it is so, the heat is set upon by his contrary the cold, and this cold with force and vehemencie doth overcome and coole in such manner, that it cannot worke his effect.

I. So it is, and the experience of this is seen in great he-goats, which is a most luxurrious beast, and in carrying him to cold countries, either he cannot live, or he loseth much of his naturall strength.

W. The Faunes or halfe goats which the ancient writers called halfe gods, authors and poets tell that they were wonderfully luxurrious.

G. Is it true, that there were and are such men in the world called Faunes?

A. In the life of Saint Paul the first Hermit, they say, that in that desert where he made his repentance, Saint Antonie likewise made his, who by revelation knowing he was nere Saint Paul, went to visit him, and in the way met with one, which from the girdle upward had the perfect forme of a man, except that he had his head full of little hornes, & from

A a a

160



cornequéllos pequeños, y de medio para abajo éra cabrón con muy largas vedijas, y pies de lo mismo.

E. Hablaba alguna cosa?

A. Si que el sancto le habló, y le preguntó quien éra y el en un lenguaje muy bárvaro, pero tal que el sancto le pudo entender, le respondió, que era vno de los aviradores de aquél desierto, a quien la ciega gentilidad adorava por dióces, pero que éran criaturas mortales, y dixomas a el santo, que su grey y gente le enbiava a el por embaxador a rogar le a el Sancto, que rogase por todos a el commun Dios de todas las gentes, que bien savían que avia baxado de el cielo y hecho se hombre por redimir a los hombres, y con esto se fue por aquel desierto, con tanta ligeréza que en muy breve espácio, le perdió de vista el sancto.

D. Yo heleydo tambien, que a el emperador Constantino magno, le traxéron de estos desiertos, otro bibe, y lo estubo muchos dias, y despues de muerto salado, le traxéron por muchas partes de el mundo, para que todos le biéssen.

G. Bolviendo a nuestra primera plática, que os parece de esta ciudad de Londres?

A. A mi me parece, en verano tienda, y en invierno contienda.

G. Como se entiende ésto?

A. Digo que parece, en verano tienda, por que en aquel tiempo, todos los Señores, cavalléros, y hidálgos, se salen fuera de ella, y se van a sus aldeas a passar el verano, quedando en ella solos los oficiales con sus tiendas abiertas.

G. Y por que lo de mas?

A. En yniérno son los términos, y como acúden de todo el réyno a élla

*the middle downward he was a he-goat with verie long shagge haire, and feet of the same.*

G. Spake he any thing?

A. Yea, for Saint Anthonic spake vnto him, and asked him who he was, and he in a language verie barbarous, yet notwithstanding such a language that the holy man could vnderstand, he answered him, that he was one of the inhabitants of that desert, whom the blinde Gentiles worshipped for Gods, but that they were mortall creatures, and said moreover to the Saint, that his people & nation sent him to him for an ambassador to entre at the holy mā, that he should pray for all of them to the common God of all nations, for wel they knew, that he was come downe from heauen, and being made man to redeeme mankind, and herewithall he went thorow the desert with such swiftnesse, that in short space the holy man lost the sight of him.

I. Also haue I read, that they brought to the Emperour Constantine the great, out of those deserts, another alime, & there he was many daies, and afterward being dead and salted, they carried him thorow many parts of the world, that all men might see him.

W. Turning to our first spech, what doe you thinke of the citie of London?

A. It seemes to me in summer a shop, and in winter a contention.

W. How is this to be vnderstood?

A. I say it seemes in summer a shop, for that in that time, all the noble men, knights, and gentlemen, doe goe out of the citie, and they goe to country villages to passe ouer the summer, onely artificers remaining in it, with their shops open.

W. And why the other?

A. In winter are the termes, and out of euerie place of the kingdome, they come

*Dialogos.*

ella a sus pleitos está, hecha toda contienda o pleito, pero vltra de esto es vna de las mejores ciudades de el mundo a lo que yo en tiendo.

G. Que dezís de toda la tierra en general?

A. Que es fertilissima y abundante, de todas las cosas que ella produce, especial de ganados, deven de ser los mas gruesos y mejores de el mundo.

G. Y tambien de semillas es muy fértil.

A. Ansi es verdad, pero como no puede aver cosa perfecta en este mundo, ya que en esto es abundante, le faltan otras cosas necesarias, a la vida humana, que ella por la frialdad de su sitio, no puede producir, y ansi tiene necesidad, de comunicacion con otros reynos.

G. Que cosas son estas, que dezís que le faltan, que yo creo que no ay cosa en el mundo, que en ella no se halle.

A. Es assi verdad, pero es comunicado de otros reynos, que bien véys vos, que en ella no se cria oro ni plata, no se coje vino, ni azútre, azúcar, seda, especiería, ni frutas de las regaladas, como son cidras, limones, limas, naranjas, granadas, almendras, y otros mil géneros de ellas, muy necesarios para el regalo de las gentes, y como digo de estas pocas cosas, pudiera dezir de otras muchas que déxo.

G. Si, pero tenemos otras, que sirven en lugar de estas cosas, y ansi no las echamos menos, como cervéza por vino, manteca por azútre, y otras semejantes.

A. Con todo esto, sería imposible poder passar este reyno sin comunicacion con otro, lo que no tiene España, que sola entre todas las provincias de el mundo, podría passar sin comunicacion con otra, por producir, dentro de si todas

*Dialogues.*

33

to it to their pleadings, and so it is made nothing but contention and wrangling in law, but besides this it is one of the best cities in the world as far as I perceive.

W. What say you of the whole land in general?

A. That it is most fruitfull, and abounding of all things, which it doth bring forth, especially flocks of sheepe, which are the greatest and best of the world.

W. And also of seeds it is very fertile.

A. It is very true, but as there cannot be any thing perfect in this world, so although in this it abounds, yet other necessarie things are wanting in it, which are required to humane life, which through the coldnesse of the situation, it cannot bring forth, and so it hath need of commerce with other nations.

W. What things are those which you say, that are wanting in it for I beleene that there is not any thing in the world that in it is not found.

A. It is true, but it is brought from other countries, for well you see that in it neither groweth gold nor silver, nor wine, oyle, sugar, silke, spice, nor fruits of the finest sort, as are citrons, lymons, oranges, pomegranats, almonds, and a thousand other kindes of them, very necessarie for the daintie feeding of men, and as I spake of these few things, I could say of many others which I leaue.

W. Yea, but we haue others, which serue in stead of these things, and so we want them not, as beere for wine, butter for oyle, and others the like.

A. Notwithstanding all this, it were impossible this kingdom could endure without commerce with others, which Spaine standeth in no need of, for that alone among all the countries in the world might endure without communicating with



todas las cosas necessarias, a la vida vmána.

G. Pues, bien os podré yo dezir vna cosa, que España no produze.

A. Qual es?

G. Especieria, que al fin lo trácis de la yndia.

A. Tenéys razón, que éssa sóla le falta a España, pero, como vos dixistes, tambien se cria en élla, con que se podria suplir éssa falta.

G. Que es?

A. En lugar de pimienta, se cria vna yerua que llamámos pimientto, cuya simiente es de tanta fuerça, y de el propio efecto que la pimienta, que viene de yndias, en lugar de clávos, vsan muchos de los ajos, y si no fuélse por vn mal olorzillo que tienen, son mas sabrosos que éstos, de açafrán gran cantidad se coje en España, gengibre de pocos dias aca, se a començado a plantar en élla, y se da bien.

G. A lo ménos no me negaréis, ser mas fértil tierra en general Inglaterra que España.

A. Digo que es verdad, y lo conçedo, pero tambien os se dezir, que de éssa fertilidad, viene la floxedad en las carnes, y mantenimientos de ella, que son de poco nutrimento y sustancia, y ésta es la causa, de que los Yngléses nos notáys a los Españoles por miserables en el comer, por que las carnes de España, como de tierra mas estéril, son de tanto nutrimento que si comiése de éllas vn hombre tanto como en Ynglaterra come, sin dúbda ninguna, reventaría.

D. Por ésto, ay uno manera de dezir, comun en España, Tu padre \*genó carnero assádo, y acostó se, y murió se pues, no preguntes, de que murió.

A. En la propia España tenemos la isperiencia de ésto que la Andaluzia que es tierra mas fértil que

any other country, bringing forth within it selfe all those necessarie things for mans life.

W. But well may I tell you one thing which Spaine affords not.

A. What is it?

W. Spice, which you fetch from the Indies.

A. You say true, for Spaine onely wants this, but as you haue said also, there growes in it that which may supply this want.

W. What is it?

A. In stead of pepper there growes an herbe which we call pepper herbe, whose seed is of such strength, and of the very same effect the pepper is which comes from the Indies. In stead of cloves, many use garlick, and if it were not for a little smell which it hath, they are more sa-nourie then the other. Great quantitie of saffron is had in Spaine. Ginger not long since is begun to be planted therein, and it prospereth well.

W. At least you will not denie me, England generally to be a more fertile country then Spaine.

A. I say it is true, and I doe grant it, but also I can tell you, that of this fertility proceeds the faintnesse of the flesh there, and the substance of it, which is of small nourishment and sustenance, and this is the cause why the English men doe marke the Spaniards for pinching in their diet, for that the flesh of Spaine, as of a country more barren, is of such nourishment, that if a man should eat of it so much as in England they eat, without doubt he should burst.

I. For this cause, there is a common saying in Spaine, Thy father supped with mutton roasted, and went to bed and died, doe not now aske whereof he died.

A. In Spaine we haue the experience of this, that in Andaluzia, which is a country more fertile then \*Estre-madura

\* A province in Spain.

que *Extremadura*, las carnes de ella, no son con mucho de tanto nutrimento, ni tan buen favor, como estas otras.

E. También se veé esto en los ynglésses, que van a España, que dizen que no pueden comér tanta carne allá, como comían acá.

G. Dize a óra, que os parece, de el trato de nuestra gente?

A. Generalmente hablando, toda la gente ynglésses, es benina, y amorosa, afable, alegre, y amigos de regozijos, y fiestas, agenos de toda melancolia, como aquellos, en quien predomina el humor sanguino, pero fuera de esto, he notado en todos en general tan ynsatiabile avaricia, que desdora todas sus virtudes.

G. Y de las mugéres que dezís?

A. Las mugéres generalmente hablando, pienso que són las mas hermosas de el mundo, por que tienen todas tres grácias particulares, para ser lo, que son en extremo blancas, coloradas, y rubias, y la que con estas grácias que son generales a todas, aciérta a tener buenas facciones, es acabada en hermosura: pero también os digo con la misma generalidad, que tienen tres faltas.

G. Quales son por vida vuestra?

A. No las quisiera dezir, por no caer, en desgracia con ellas.

G. Yo salgo por fiador que no cairéis.

A. \* Teneis razón, que quien nunca subió, no puede caer, pero las tres faltas son, pequeños ojos, grandes bocas, no buena tez en los rostros, y de esto es la causa el ayre tan frío y sutil, que corre en estas partes, que se les cúrte y por esto es buena la ynbinción la, de las mas casillas, aunque yo entiendo que no deve de bastar.

G. Vos lo avéis disputado muy bien, y yo os quedo muy aficionado servidór, y assi os suplico, que el tiempo que estubiéredes en esta tierra os sirváis de mi.

A. Yo

*māadura*, the flesh is not by odds of such nourishment nor of so good taste as that of *Extremadura*.

G. Also it may be scene in Englishmen which goe into Spaine, which say that they cannot eat so much flesh there, as they did eat here.

W. Tell me now, what you thinke of the English manner?

A. Speaking generally, all the English people are courteous and loving, affable, and merry, and lovers of sports and feasts, free from all melancholie, as those in whom doth predominate the sanguine complexion: but besides this I have noted in generall, such an insatiable covetousnesse, as doth deface all their virtues.

W. And what say you of the women?

A. The women generally, I thinke they are the most faire of the world, for they have all the three speciall graces which make them so, they are wonderfully white and red, and that with these graces which are generall to all, there hapneth for them to have such good favour, whereby they are most beautifull: but also I tell you with the same generalitie, that they have three faults.

W. I pray you what are they?

A. I would not willingly tell them, lest I fall into disgrace with them.

W. I will be your suretie you shall not.

A. You say true, he that neuer gat up, can neuer fall, but the three wants are little eies, great monthes, and not very smooth skin in the face, and hereof the cause is, for that the aire is so cold and subtil in these parts, which doth tan them, and therefore masks were wel innented, although as I perceive they helpe not.

W. You have disputed very well, and I remaine your affectionate servant, and so I intreat you that the time you are in this countrey you so use me.

Aaa 3

A. I



- A. Yo os doy muchas gráças, por el ofrecimiento, y quedo yo no menos a vuestro servicio, y por que se va haziendo tarde, nos vamos recojiendo alas posadas que ya es ora.
- G. Beso a vuestras mercedes las manos.
- D. Yo las de vuestras mercedes.

*Diálogo séptimo, entre un sargento, y un capo de escuadra, y un Soldado, en el qual se trata, de las cosas pertenecientes a la malicia, y de las calidades que deve tener un buen soldado, con muchos dichos graciosos y buenas quenteras.*

- Sa. ¿Donde camina señor soldado?
- So. O Señor Sargento házia la tabla, si v.m. no manda otra cosa.

- Sa. Lleva muchos dineros que jugar?

- So. Mi paga entera como la recibí, que no he osado gastar vn real, por no quitar se lo a el juego.

- Sa. Esto es de buenos compañeros, antes falte para el cuerpo que para el juego.

- So. A que sería puedo yo yr, en que mas gane, pues aventuro con quatro ducados ganar quatro-cientos.

- Sa. Y si el dado dice mal, allá van rocín y manzanas.

- So. Señor o rico pijado, o muerto descalabrado.

- Sa. Esta es la cuenta de los perdidos.

- So. Cuerpo de tal señor, que hijos o muger tengo yo que mantener?

- Sa. Si però ne fuera mejor vestir se que jugar el dinero?

- So. Yo he hecho mi cuenta, y he menester camisas, jubón, sayo, calzones, medias, y zapatos, y sonbrero, y en quatro ducados, no ay para todo, pues comprar vno nuevo,

- A. I give you many thanks for your offer, and I remaine no lesse at your service, and because it waxeth late, let us betake our selves to our lodgings, for it is time.

- W. I kisse your hands:

- I. And I yours.

*The senenish Dialogue, betweene a Sergeant of a band, and a Corporall, and a Souldier, in which are handled matters pertaining to warfare, and the parts that a good souldier ought to haue, with many fine sayings & good speeches.*

- Sa. Whither walke you souldier?

- So. O sergeant, towards the dining place, if you command no other matter.

- Sa. Doe you carry with you much money to play?

- So. My whole pay as I receiued it, for I durst not spend one six pence thereof, lest I should take away so much from play.

- Sa. This is the part of good companions, let there be wanting for the body, rather then for play.

- So. To what faire may I goe, wherein I may gaine more, seeing I venture with foure duckates, to gaine foure hundred.

- Sa. If the die turne ill, there goes horse and apples.

- So. Sir, either hanged rich, or dead with head broken.

- Sa. This is the reckoning of cast-aways.

- So. Bodie of me, what children or wife haue I to keepe?

- Sa. You but were it not better to apparel your selfe, then to play away your money?

- So. I haue reckoned with my selfe, I haue need of shirts, doublet, cassocke, breeches, stockings, shoes, and hat, and in foure duckates, there is not for all this, for to buy one thing new

*\* A horse laden with apples passing a river was carried away, and so both lost.*

*Diálogos.*

- évo, y traer lo otro viejo, no parece bien, quiero jugar, quizá ganaré para comprar lo todo.
- Sa. Y si los pierde, quedar se ha sin lo vno y lo otro.
- So. Señor, preso por mil, preso por mil y quinientos, todo es estar preso, diré entonces desnudo nací, y desnudo me hallo y desnudo moriré.
- Sa. Digame, save quando entramos de guardia?
- So. Esta noche le toca a la compañía.
- Sa. Con que armas sirve con pica, o arcabúz?
- So. Con vn mosquete de siete palmos.
- Sa. Pues como dize, que no sacó mas que quatro ducadas teniendo siete depaga.
- So. Vno me descontraron de pólvora y cuerda los contadores, otro le dado a mi camarada para la despesa de esta semana, y otro que se me quitó de los \* focorros.
- Sa. justa está la quenta.
- So. Es como la de el trillo, cada piedra en su agujero.
- Sa. Quantos son de camarada?
- So. Tres y con migo quatro.
- Sa. Tantos pies tiene vn gato.
- So. cinco con el rabo.
- Sa. Tienen buen aloxamiento?
- So. Tal sea la salud de el aposentador que nos le dió.
- Sa. Como no es bueno?
- So. Peor es vna çahurda de lechones.
- Sa. Tienen huéspedea hermosa?
- So. Hermosa señor sarjento, yo pienso que los diablos son serafines en su comparación.
- Sa. Bueno es el encareçimiento, que talle tiene?
- So. Ella es mas vieja que *Metusalén*, mas arugada que vna pása, mas súzia que vna mosca, mas feca, que vn palo, dientey muela, como por la mano, la boca su-mída, como ojo de culo, los ojos el vno tuerro, y el otro que no se le sacaran con vn garavato finalmente, toda ella es vn retrato

*Dialogues.*

59

- new and wear another old, seems not well, I will play, peradventure I shall get so much to buy all new.*
- Sa. *If you lose, you must goe without one and the other.*
- So. *Sir, arrested for a thousand, taken for a thousand five hundred, all is but to be arrested, I will then say I was borne naked, and naked I finde my selfe, and naked shall I die.*
- Sa. *Tell me, doe you know when we watch?*
- So. *This night it falls to the companie.*
- Sa. *What armes serve you with, a pike or shot?*
- So. *With a musket of seven handfuls.*
- Sa. *How then said you, that you had but foure ducats, having seven for your pay?*
- So. *One ducate defalked for powder and match, the other haue I giuen to my comerade for the charges of this weeke, and the other was taken out for lendings.*
- Sa. *Ther reckoning is very right.*
- So. *It is euen as a threshing floore, euery stone in his hole.*
- Sa. *How many cabbinmates are you together?*
- So. *Three, and with me foure.*
- Sa. *So many feet hath a cat.*
- So. *He hath five with the taile.*
- Sa. *Haue all you good lodging?*
- So. *I would to God such were the health of the Furrriel which gaue it vs.*
- Sa. *How so, is it not good?*
- So. *A pigstie is worse.*
- Sa. *Haue you a faire Hostesse?*
- So. *Faire, master Sargeant, I thinke the \* deuils are Seraphims in respect of her.*
- Sa. *You giue her good commendations, what handsomnesse is in her?*
- So. *Shee is more old than Methusalem, more wrinkled than a dried grape, or raisin, more filthy than \* a flie, more dry than a sick: teeth & chock teeth as in ones hand, the mouth sunke in as the hole of the taile, the eyes one quite out, and the other so sunke into her head that it cannot be plucked out with a hook. In fine, all of*

\* Succours or lendings which they giue souldiers when there is no pay, and when the pay comes, they take it off.

\* Which goeth and sucketh euery filthy wound of carnion.



retrato de la ynbidia.

- Sa. Esta tal será v'nico remedio contra luxuria.
- So. Pues es lo bueno que con todas estas grácias se aseita y repica.
- Sa. Y v. m. no le haze el amor?
- So. Amor, o, que boro a tal, no la acométa vn Tigre.
- Sa. A'nde, que para vn lava dientes no será mala.
- So. Mas me los quiero traér lúzios que no mal lavállos.
- Sa. Mas yo créo, que es como dizen, \*quién dize mal de la yégua, esse la lléva.
- So. Par diez, no soy si no como la zorra que quando no pudo alcançar las vbas, dixo vbas de parra, así como así no las aviá gana.
- Sa. Aqui viene el cávo de esquadra, veámos que nuevas trác. De donde viene señor cávo de es esquadra?
- Ca. De la bandéra.
- Sa. Queda alli el alférez?
- C. No señor, que está en cása de el capitán.
- So. A el capitán y alférez déxo yo aóra en cása de el maestre de campo.
- Sa. Que nuévas ay por alla?
- Ca. Nuévas ciertas pocas, mentiras ynfinitas.
- Sa. Que se dize aóra en el cuerpo de guardia?
- Ca. Vnos dizen, que nos embarcarémos para corrér la cósta, otros que quedarémos aquí de precidio, otros que yrémos a Irlanda, no ay quien lo entienda.
- Sa. Todo esto es adivinar, cada vno lo que deséa o le está bien.
- Ca. Como dezia el otro capitán, los soldados son profetas de el diáblo.
- Sa. Y tenía razón, porque así como el diablo no sabe lo por venir, si no que lo conjetura así házen ellos: y entre mil conjeturas que

her together is the very picture of Ennie.

- Sa. Shee must needs be the onely remedy against lust.
- So. But this is the best of her, which with all these good graces is painted out and spoken of.
- Sa. And doe you not make love to her?
- So. Love, I sweare by such a one, a Tiger would not set upon her.
- Sa. Goe foole, shee is good enough to wash ones mouth, and spit out againe.
- So. I had rather they should bring my clothes foule than ill washed.
- Sa. But I beleave, it is as they say, he that dispraiseth the mare carrieth her away.
- So. By this ten bones, I am no otherwise than the fox, that when he could not reach the grapes, said grape of the vine, so euen so that he had no stomacke to eat them.
- Sa. Here comes the corporall, let vs see what newes hee brings. From whence come you corporall?
- Co. From the colours.
- Sa. Is the Ancient there?
- Co. No sir, he is at the capitaines house.
- So. The Capitaine and Ensigne I left euen now in the Camp-masters house.
- Sa. What newes thereabout?
- Co. Certaine newes very few, lies infinite many.
- Sa. What say they now upon the guard?
- Co. One saies, we shall embarke our selues to skoure the coast, others that we shall remaine here in garrison, others that we shall goe for Ireland, none can tell what.
- Sa. All this is, every one to gesse at that which he doth himselfe desire, or like best of.
- Co. As another capitaine said, Souldiers are prophets of the demill.
- Sa. And he said well, for as the demill doth not know, what which is to come, but by coniecture, so do they: & among a thousand coniectures which they make,

*Diálogos.*

que házen, alguna han de açertar.

Ca. Tambien se suena que el rey de España, árma para venir contra *Inglaterra*.

Sa. Venga en óra buena, si tráe muchos dinéros que dexárnos.

S. Yo con vna cadena de óro que valga cien libras me contento.

Ca. Pues afee que no las suelen vender muy baratas los Españóles.

So. Y yo con vna onça de plomo la pienso comprar.

Ca. Éllo es hazer quenta sin la huésped: y quíça yréis por lana, y bolveréis tresquilado: que adonde las dan las róman.

So. Señor, si me matáren, tal dia hizo vn año, tambien murió mi aguelo, ya está olvidado a élllo jugámos, oy por mi, mañana por ti, no tengo hijos que dexár huérfanos, ni padre ni madre, ni perro que me ladre, \* muera *Marta* y muera harta.

Ca. Plegue a dios que quando llegue la ocaçión no se calçe vn as calças de villa *Diego*.

Sa. Señor tan buenos hombres ay por los pies como por las manos.

So. Por ser mis oficiáles, vuestras mercedes me pueden dezir éllo, pero si otro me lo dixéra, matára me con él.

Ca. No dezímos aquí, que lo hará, pero podría acontecer.

So. Tambien se podría caer el cielo y nos cogería debaxo.

Sa. Demanera que tanta dificultád ay en huyr v. m. como en caerse el cielo.

Ca. El de la cama dize este soldádo.

So. No soy menor de edad que he menester curador, señor cayo de escuadra, yo sabré responder por mi.

Ca. Siempre oy dezir, que vna buena obra sepaga con vna mala.

So. \* No

*Dialogues.*

61

make, they are to hit upon one.

Co. In like sort, the rumor goeth that the king of Spaine makes preparation to come against England.

Sa. Let him come, if he bring good store of crownes to leane vs.

So. I would content my selfe with a chaine of gold, that were worth a hundred pound.

Co. But in faith the Spaniards are not wont to sell them very good cheape.

So. And I hope to buy one with an ounce of lead.

Co. That is to reckon without the Hostesse, and peradventure you will goe for wooll, and returne home shorne, for where men giue there they receive.

So. Sir, if they kill me, that day made up iust a yeere, in like manner died my grand-father, and now is forgotten, at this we play, to day for me, to morrow for thee, I haue no children to leane orphans, neither father, nor mother, nor dogge that barketh at me, \* let *Marta* die, yet let her die full.

\* A man having a wife named *Marta*, which he often beat for too much drinking, at last almost killing her she said, Muera *Marta*, y muera harta. \* i. Run away.

Co. I pray God that when triall shall be made, that you doe not \* put on the hose of the towne *Diego*.

Sa. Sir there are as good men of their feet as of their hands.

So. In that you are my officers, you may say this unto me, but if another should say so, I would fight with him.

Co. We doe not say here, that you would doe so, but it might happen.

So. As well might \* el Cielo fall, and then it would catch vs vnder.

\* El cielo, the skie. Also the tester of a bed.

Sa. So then it is as hard a matter for you to run away as for the skie to fall.

Co. This soldier speaketh of the \* Cielo of his bed.

\* i. Testers of the bed.

So. I am not in my nonage, that I need one to care for me, master Corporall I shall know how to answer for my selfe.

Co. I haue alwaies heard, that one good worke is requited with an euill.

So. Doe



So. \* No sabe v. m. que está vna higa en Roma para el que da consejo a quien no se le pide.

Sa. No se enoje señor soldado que se hará viejo antes de tiempo.

So. \* No puede ya ser mas negro el cuervo que sus alas.

Sa. Señor cayo de escuadra, vaya digale a el atambor que toque a recoger la guardia.

Ca. Yo voy aguarde me aqui v. m.

So. Señor sargento dexeme yr a jugar vn rato antes que se meta la guardia.

Sa. Tanto le pesa esse dinero, que tal priciella tiene por echarlo de si.

So. Yo mas querria doblallo.

Sa. \* No sabe como dize vn refrán, si quieres tener dineros tenellos.

So. De que sirve tener pocos? o Cesar o nada.

Sa. Vaya con Dios, y pare lo a buen punto.

So. Dios melibre de vn azar.

Sa. \* Y ami de vellacos en qu...rilla, y villanos en gavilla, de moça adivina, y de vieja latina, de todos a el caminar, y de larga enfermedad, de párrafo de le-gista, de yntra de canonista, de eçerera de escrivano, y de rē-cipe de médico, de razón de diz que però y si no, y de sentençia de conque.

Ca. Ya toca la caja a recoger.

Sa. Vamos entre tanto a buscar a el Sargento mayor, para que me de el nombre.

Ca. El estará en casa de el general.

Sa. Vamos allá, que todo es camino, es menester que ésta noche aya muy buena guardia.

Ca. Por que ay alguna sospecha?

Sa. Ay nuevas de enemigos, y assi es necesario doblar las postas y reforçarlas, y poner dos otras çentinelas

So. Doe you not know, that there is a flout for him in Rome, that gives coun-sell to him that requires it not at his hands.

Sa. Be not angry master soldier, for it will make you old before your time.

So. \* The crow cannot be blacker than her feathers.

Sa. Corporall goe and tell the drum that he sound to set the watch.

Co. I goe, tarry for me here.

So. Sargeant, let me goe play at dice a lit-tle before the watch be set.

Sa. So troublesome is his money to him, that he hasteth to throw it from him.

So. I would rather double it.

Sa. Doe you not know what the proverbe saith, if you will have money keepe it.

So. What good will a little doe one? either an Emperour or nothing.

Sa. Goe in Gods name, and rest when you are well.

So. God keepe me from a hazard.

Sa. And me frō knaves in my squadron, & clownes \* in shocks together from a maid that is a propheteesse; and an old woman a latinist; from durt in iourneys; and from long sicknesse; from the paragaffe of the lawyer; from the infra of the Canonist; from the et vetera of the Scrivener; from the recipe of the Physitian; from that reason that saith, He saith that, but, if not; and from the sentence of, with which.

Co. Now sounds the drum to set the watch.

Sa. In the meane while let vs goe seeke the Sergeant major, that he may give me the word.

Co. He will be at the generals house.

Sa. Let vs goe thither, for it is all in our way, it is needfull to night that there be a good guard.

Co. Why, is there any suspicion of any thing?

Sa. There is newes of the enemy, & there-fore needfull to double the set men to watch, and to make them strong, and

\* It cannot be worse then it is, or nothing can exceed the high-est degree.

\* i. Multitudes together.

centinelas perdidas y que la ronda y contra ronda visiten amenúdo.

Ca. Pida vna a el fargento mayor, que nos den leña harra, para que aya buena lumbre en el cuerpo de guárdia.

Sa. Ansi será, y todas las armas estarán \* muy apunto que hombre aperçevido, médio combatido.

Ca. Menester será dar a los soldados pólvora, cuérda, y balas.

Sa. Todo se les dará y órden a los cose-  
létes que no les falte pieça.

Ca. Qual es la mejor arma de las que  
vsamos en la guerra?

Sa. La pica es la réyna de las armas.

Ca. Poco valdrían las picas, sino se guar-  
nesiessen con la arcabuzería, que  
daña a el enemigo desde a fuera.

Sa. Menos valdria la arcabuzería, si  
despues de dada la carga, no tu-  
viéssedonde reparar de la ca-  
vallería enemiga, y de todos los  
demás que le procuráren dañar.

Ca. Si, però bien vemos que mayor da-  
ño se le haze a el enemigo con  
la arcabuzería, y mosquetería,  
que con las picas.

Sa. Todo esse daño es poco en compara-  
ción de el que se recibe a el des-  
barate de vn escuadrón o exér-  
cito, el qual se seguiría luego con  
la cavallería, si las picas que es  
vna muralla fuerte, no se pusies-  
sen ala defensa.

Ca. Por ésto compáran a vn escuadrón  
bien formado, a el cuerpo vmáno  
donde los braços, y piernas, que  
son los que óbran son los arcabu-  
zéros y las picas que están siem-  
pre firmes, y es de dó viene vir-  
túd, a todas las partes de el esqua-  
drón, el cuerpo y coraçón.

Sa. Assi es, y aunsi miráis la forma de vn  
escuadrón de los ordinarios for-  
mado, con sus mángas, hallaréis  
en el, la misma forma de el cuerpo  
vmáno.

Ca. Que partes se requiere que tenga vn  
buen soldado?

Sa. Muchas

and to put two or three\* ball cen-  
tinel, and that the round & coun-  
terround may goe very thicke.

\* Those that be  
close under the  
cannon to hear  
that they fire and  
die.

Ca. Require of the Sargeant major, that  
he give us wood enough, that there  
be a good fire upon the bodie of the  
guard.

Sa. So it shall be, and all the armes to be  
very ready, for a man well warned  
halfe armed.

Co. It will be needfull to give to the souldi-  
ers powder, match, bullets.

Sa. All shall be given them, and order for  
the corslets that they want no peece.

Co. Which is the best weapon, of those we  
use in warre?

Sa. The pike is the queene of weapons.

Co. Of little availe were pikes, if they were  
not lined with shot, which hurteth  
the enemy a far off.

Sa. Of lesse availe were the shot, after they  
had discharged, if they had no place  
to defend themselves from the ene-  
mies horsemen, & all the rest which  
should endeavour to offend them.

Co. Yea, but we well see, that greater dam-  
mage is made to the enemy, by  
small shot and musket, then with  
pikes.

S. All this damage is little in compari-  
son of that is received at the  
onset of a squadron or ar-  
mie, the which would follow  
straight with the horse, if the  
pikes, which is a strong wall, did  
not put themselves in defence  
thereof.

C. Hereby they compare a squadron well  
in order, to a mans bodie, where  
the armes and legs which are  
those that worke, are the shot and  
the pikes which stand alwaies firme,  
and from whence proceed force to  
all the parts of the squadron, to the  
bodie and heart.

S. So it is, and also if you markewell the  
fashion of a squadron of the ordi-  
nario squadrons made with his  
wings, you shall finde in it the very  
fashion of a mans bodie.

C. What parts are required in a good souldi-  
er?

S. Many



Sa. Muchas, y muchos escriviéron de ésta materia, pero las mas necesarias y ordinarias, yo las diré. El soldado, quanto a lo priméro, deve ser muy honroso, porque soldado sin honra sería de ningun provecho, pues ella es la escuela que le ha de hazer obrarlo, que no bástan premios, ni ruegos, ni amenazas de sus oficiales.

Ca. Por esso, deve el soldado traer, siempre escrita en la frente aquella \*coplilla que dize, por la honra pon la vida, y pon las dos, honra y vida por tu Dios.

S. Lo segundo deve ser el soldado valiente, no temeroso ni covarde.

C. \* El soldado covarde mas propriamente se podría llamar espantajo, al qual quando los páxaros le pierden una vez el miedo, se asientan encima de el, o como el Rey de las ranas.

S. Como es ésto de el Rey de las ranas?

C. Dizen, que en tiempo de mari castaña, las ranas desleáron tener Rey como todas las demas naciones, y pidieron a *Iupiter* que era Rey de los dióces que les diéssse Rey el qual viéndo su neçedad quiso burlar de ellas, y dixo les que para un dia señaládo les daría Rey, ellas le esperávan con grande alegría, y venido aquel día, salieron todas, de sus casas, muy compuestas, como convenia para recebir a su rey y pusieron sen la superficie de el agua esperando; en este tiempo *Iupiter* arrojó desde el cielo, vn gran madéro, que dió con el, en la laguna donde, ellas estávan, tan gran golpe, y hizo tan gran ruido que ellas fueron todas turbadas, y asombradas, y unas por aquí, y otras por allí, cada una huyó a su casa, sin osár llegar, a hazer a su rey el devido acatamiento, ni salir fuera en muchos dias quedó se el madéro nadando encima de el agua, y ellas con tanto remor

S. Many, and many have written of this matter, but the most necessarie & ordinarie I will tell you. The souldier touching the first point, ought to be honourable, for a souldier without honour would profit little, because it is the spur which drives him on to effect that, which rewards are not sufficient to doe, nor intreaties, nor threatnings of his officers.

C. Therefore the souldier should carry alwaies written in his forehead this verse, which saith, For thy honour hazard thy life, and hazard them both, honour and life for thy God.

Sa. The second, the souldier ought to be valiant, and not fearefull nor coward.

Co. A cowardly souldier may better be called, a thing made to feare away crows, that when the birds doe once cast off their feare of the same, they sit on the top of it, or as the king of frogs.

Sa. How is that of the king of frogs?

Co. They say, in old time, when beasts could speake, the frogs desired to have a king, as other nations had, and they requested *Iupiter*, which was king of the gods, that he would give them a king, which seeing their simplicitie, would needs mock them a little, and told them that by a day appointed, he would give them a king: they waited for it, with great ioy, and the day being come, all of them came forth out of their houses, well attired, as was fit for the receiving of a king, and put themselves upon the upper part of the water waiting: then *Iupiter* casteth downe from heauen a great blocke, which lighted in the lake where they were: it gave such a blow, and made such a noise, that they were all troubled, & amased; some this way, others that way, every one ran home to his house without daring to come neere, to make their due reverence to their king, nor to come forth a doores in many daies. The beame remained

mór de vér cosa tan grande, que ninguna osáva salir fuera de su casa, y allí morían de hambre, hasta que poco apoco fue saliéndo la mas esforcada, y siguiéndo la las demas, cada dia yvan perdiéndo mas el temór, y se yvan llegando cerca de su rey, viendo le a el ran manso y que no se movía, ni les dezía mala palabra, al fin tanto continuaron y (como la mucha conversación es causa de menosprecio) se llegaron a su rey y viendo todas lo que era, saltaron encima de el, y començaron a cherrár y dar grandes risádas, haziéndo burla de su Rey, y de su temor pasado bolviéron pues, a ynsistir a *Iupiter* que en todo caso les diéssse Rey no tan manso, si no que fuéssse justiciéro, *Iupiter* viendo su neçia poria les ymbió por Rey a la cigueña, la qual réyna hasta oy entre ellas, cebando se y comiéndolas cada dia en pena de su loca petición, pues pudiendo bivar libres quisieron mas hazér se esclavas y mas vn Rey cruel, que manso y benigno.

Sa. No ha estado mal el quento, y mejor es la moralidad.

Ca. Dexémos ésto aora, y prosiga v. m. adelante con su plática de el buen soldado.

Sa. Lo tercero que ha de tener ha de ser gran sufridor de travájos, y para esto deve ser de rezia complexion.

Ca. Ya el que esso no tuviere, el diáblo le truxo a la guerra, como dicen de el moço vergonçoso, que el diablo le trájó a palácio.

Sa. Deve tambien ser muy obediente a sus oficiales, y que haga de buena gana y sin mostrar mal rostro lo que le ordenáren siendo de el servicio de la Réyna.

Ca. Quien le a la milicia la obediencia

and there swimming upon the water, and they with such feare, to see a thing so great, that none of them durst once goe out of his dores, & therein they died with hunger, untill that by little and little, the most hardiest of them went out, and the rest following, every day they went more and more, losing their feare, & they went nearer to their king, seeing him so gentle, and that he moued not, nor said neuer an ill word to them, in the end they continued so long, & (as much familiaritie oftentimes breeds contempt) they approached to their king, and seeing all of them what he was, they leaped upon him, and they began to croake and to breake out into great laughers, making a iest of their king, and of their own passed feare: they returned afterward to importune *Iupiter*, that by all meanes he would giue them a king, but not so still and quiet, but that he should be a iusticer; *Iupiter* seeing their foolish importunitie, sent the Storke to them for a king, the which reigneth till this day among them, fasting himself, and eating them up every day, as a punishment for their fond request. when they might haue liued at liberty, they would make themselves slaves, and rather set up a cruell king, then a benigne and gentle.

Sa. The tale hath not beene ill, yet better is the morall thereof.

Co. Let vs leane this, and goe forward with your speech of the good souldier.

Sa. The third that he is to haue, is to be a great endurer of trauels, and for this he should be of a strong complexion.

Co. And he that hath not this, the Deuill brought him to the warre, as it is said hee brought the blisb-faced young man to the Court.

Sa. He ought also to be very obedient to his officers, and that hee performe that obedience with a good will, and without shewing an ill countenance to that they shall ordaine, being for the *Queenes* service.

Co. Let them take away obedience in souldiers



cia en los soldados, y volver se ha en confusión *Babilónica*.

Sa. Otras muchas particularidades, ha de tener el buen soldado, que yo no quiero tratar agora, quien las qui siere ver, lea quatro o cinco tratados que andan de ello en lengua Española vno de el capitan *Martin de Eguíluz*, y otro de *Escalante*, otro de don *Fernando de Cordua*, y otro de don *Bernardino de Mendoza*, que alli lo verá bien pintado.

Ca. A qui buelve nuestro mosquetero, muy cabizbajo viene, perdido deve de aver.

Sa. A señor soldado vna palabra.

So. Dexe me v. m. señor Sargento, basta me mi mala ventura.

Sa. Que ha sido, perdióte toda el armada?

So. No copara yo aqui agora con el vellaco que este juego ynventó.

Sa. Que le queria dezir?

So. Reniego del diablo, si no le avia de hozér mas rajadas que pñntos se han echado en los dados des pues que el los ynventó.

Sa. \* Ello me parece echar la culpa de el asno a la aluárda quien le mandó a v. m. jugar?

So. El Diablo que no duerme, y anda tras hazérme desespèrta para llevárme.

Sa. Pues mire no le crea, sino quando venga, diga le que por agora no puede yr, que está ocupado en servicio de su magestad, que se buelva otro dia, y si no quisiere deshagale la horquilla en la cabeza.

So. Muy bueno va esto, estoy yo rabiando y esta se va burlando de mi.

Sa. Mire, yo le dare un buen remedio como dos onças de jarabe de paciència, y quatro de unguento de olvido, y beualo todo, y con ello purgara esta malenconia y quedara luego bueno.

So. Serán dos purgas una tras otras despues

diers in war, and it will turne to a *Babilonick* confusion.

Sa. The good souldier is to haue many other particulars, which I will not now handle, whoeuer will see them, let him reade foure or fve treatises which handle it in the Spanish tongue, one of captaine *Martin Eguiluz*, another of *Escalante*, another of *Don Fernando de Cordua*, and another of *Don Bernardin Mendoza*, there may it be found well set out.

Co. Here comes backe againe our muskettier, he comes hanging downe his head, it is likely he hath lost.

Sa. Ho Souldier a word with you.

So. Let me alone Sergeant, it is enough that I haue ill lucke,

Sa. What hath hapned, is all the fleet lost?

So. I would not meet now with that villaine that inuented this play.

Sa. What would you say to him?

So. I renounce the deuill, if I would not giue him more flashes then hee hath set prickes on dice, since he inuented them.

Sa. This seemes to me, to put the fault of the asse on the packe saddle, Who commanded you to play?

So. The deuill which sleeps not, and followes after me to driue me into despair, that he might carry me away.

Sa. Then marke what I say, doe not belceue him, but when he cometh tell him, that for this time you cannot goe, that you are imployed in her *Majesties* seruice, that he come another day, and if he will not, clap your musquet flasse on his pate.

So. This goes well, I stand raging, and you mocking.

Sa. Behold, I will giue you a good remedie, Take two ounces of the sirrups of paciencie, and foure ounces of the oile of forgetfulness, and drinke it off, and with this you shall purge this melancholy, and forthwith you shall be well.

So. That will be two purges one after another

*Diálogos.*

*Dialogues.*

67

pues de purgada la bolsa purgár el cuerpo.

other, after the purse is purged to purge the bodie.

Sa. Pues nunca ha oydo dezir, que un clavos saca otro, y una mano lava otro, y entrambas la cara.

Sa. Have you never heard, that one naile drineth out another, one hand washeth another, and both of them the face.

Ca. Pues como se dió tan presto fin ala triste tragédia.

Co. But how made you such a quicke end of the sad tragedie?

So. Yo les diré a vuestras merçedes como fue, el me dió a parár a onze, paré le quatro reales, echóme un enquentro, y tiróme los.

So. I will tell you how it was, he chanced me a eleven, I set him two shillings, he cast and drew them.

Sa. Mal principio.

Sa. An ill beginning.

So. Antes suelen dezir, que es buen pronóstico perder la primer a mano.

So. Rather they are wont to say, it is a good signe to lose the first hand.

Ca. No ay regla tan general que no tenga excepción.

Co. There is no rule so generall which hath not some exception.

So. Dióme a parar luego a doze, que es mi suerte, paréle ocho reales, écho un azár, díxe repárolos, o torgó me el repáro, lançó el dado, y echó otro azár.

So. He chanced me forthwith twelve which is my chance, I set him foure shillings, he cast a hazard, I said I set againe, he allowes of it, he throwes the dice, & casts another hazard.

Sa. Pues pecador, para que queriades mas de avér ganado con quarenta otros quarenta, que incader ay que gane a ciento por ciento.

Sa. Why wretched sinner, what would you more then to gaine with fortie other fortie, what marchant is there which doth gaine a hundred for a hundred?

So. Señor, yo no me contenté sino quise arrancar las clavos dela mesa como dize, y díxe siete y llevar, díxo me dígole. Relanca y echa su suerte, y rebufo co todo \* ami de nome del agalla, sin blanca como el diablo seaparecio a san Benito.

So. I was not content, but would pull in peece the nailes of the table as they say, and I said I set seven times so much as he drew, he said content, I say content. He throwes againe the dice, and he drew up all, and so he left me hanging on the gill, without a farthing, as the devill appeared to Saint Benit.

\* As a fish.

Ca. \* Siempre lo verá, que quien todo lo quiere todo lo pierde.

Co. You shall alwaies see, he that all conueth, all loseth.

So. \* Mas siempre despues de ydo el conçe viene el conçe.

So. But after the steed stollen, but the stable doore.

Sa. \* Aóra bien quien érra y se enmiénda a Dios se encomiénd.

Sa. Now he that erres and amends, to God himselfe commends.

So. La enmiénda será empenar el capotillo, para bolverme a esquitár si puedo.

So. The mends will be to pawne the cap-socke to go againe to quit my selfe if I can.

Sa. Esta no será enmiénda sino obstinación.

Sa. This will not be an amends, but obstinacie.

So. \* Aqui perdí vna aguja, aqui la tengo de hallár.

So. Here lost I a needle, and here hope I to finde it againe.

Sa. No veis pecador que se os cayó en la mar esta aguja, como la quereis hallár?

Sa. Doe you not see, that this needle fell into the sea, how will you now finde it?

So. Yo

So. I



So. Yo me tengo de yr a una bacinera,  
que me de una foga de aborci-  
do; que dize qualquiera pa-  
ra reírse gasta.  
Ca. ¿Gastar me mi madre y yo nom-  
bre?  
Sa. A ora faga vna por ora a me-  
ter la galeña, que despa se  
corta de ello.  
Ca. Voy a llamar las camareras.  
So. Yo voy allá a verlas y a verlas las  
manos.  
Ca. Yo también quiero verlas mis ar-  
mas.  
Sa. Tome voy a lavander, all espe-  
rará.

So. I am going to a bath-house to get my face  
washed of a feverish humour, which  
any body who has a cold in his head  
will tell you.  
Ca. And what will you do there, and I  
shall be with you.  
Sa. Now I have a good way to go to the  
bath-house, for I have a good way to go  
to the bath-house.  
Ca. I shall be with you.  
So. I go to see the hands of the  
cameras.  
Ca. I shall be with you.  
Sa. I shall be with you.

FINIS



gine  
lich  
nte?

Ca.

the 2

21.

3

०५३

23

263

Ca

62

3

63

3

2